

# Confined spaces

## Introduction

Losing a parent can change ones life drastically some for good and others for bad but either way your life changes forever, and the absence will forever linger in your heart and some instances will make you miss the dead more than you thought you would but that's life, we all await our day, the day we leave this earth for something no one knows of, the day our existence will forever be in past. Allow me to share this story with you.

\*\*\*\*\*

Him: be still

Honestly I don't know what he wants I've been still ever since the first time he did this

Him: damn you're good

He keeps whispering dirty things in my ear with his head buried in the crook of my neck

I whimper

Him: be quiet

I've forever been quiet just a little whimper to acknowledge the pain that's all.

After what seems like forever he shoots his load

Him: fuck you're good baby sis

He kisses the side of my head, zips up his trouser and watches me sprawled on the tiled floor

Him: your food is in the paper bag on the kitchen counter

He leaves me there

I get up and go take a shower then head to the kitchen and he's nowhere insight which is good

I eat then head to bed and wonder how long will this continue.

\*\*\*\*\*

My mom passed away 3 years ago, she was a stay at home mom so she left nothing for us, we all took it hard but I think dad took it the hardest, he works at the mines and while Mom was alive he used to come back every weekend after Mom passed on he came back once a month for 9 months until he didn't anymore. I still wonder what went wrong. Thato( my half brother) is 5 years older than me, works at a bank as a teller he's all I have and I rely on him for everything and well like any other human he got tired of taking care of me without anything in return so a year ago he's been pleasing himself, it's the least I could do but definitely not the way I imagined losing my virginity but hey. † ♀ . We live in a well off

neighborhood 6 bedroom house on the outskirts quite big and fully paid off and furnished the only thing we need to do is pay for water, food, clothes and electricity which falls solely on Thato see what I mean. I had to quit school 2 years ago coz no one could pay for my fees so I'm always locked up in here and well I prefer it that way, around this area there's only two schools both private, I had to look for public schools which are like 20km away and that meant I had to take a taxi but with what money? So school is totally out of the picture at this moment. My name is Liyakha Booï I'm 16 years old and this is my story.

\*\* what do you think? \*\* ?

[05/26, 20:15] : Insert 1

I wake up to an empty house as usual and I

start off by cleaning the house then I do the laundry and cook enough food for dinner as well then just lazy around watching TV or try my dads cellphone number hoping it gets through this time with no luck, it's really sad but I always try his number just Incase you know hoping for a miracle but it always says it doesn't exist which just adds on to my frustration, I might have gotten used to this living situation but it doesn't mean I enjoy it somedays are better than others. I'm woken up by someone buzzing at the gate and it's Nomhle she's just a nosy neighbor probably a year or two older than me, I get up and walk to the gate, I open and go out to her she's sitting on the pavement

Nomhle: haibo you're still alive?

Me: very much so

Her: girl you sure know how to hide yourself,

you still don't want me to see your kid

Me: how many times must I tell you there is no kid

Her: girl no one quits school for no good reason I mean we all know you were pregnant

I just laugh at her

Her: even the principal knew about it

Me: ei Nomhle believe what you want since you don't wanna take my story

Her: you know my sister Nozipho ran away a few years back and we all know my parents are strict as fuck it's quite obvious she was pregnant

Me: hai you and your speculations

Her: and right now my intuition tells me you're hiding a baby behind these tall walls

Me: whatever makes you sleep at night hlehle

Her: explains why you never invite me in

Me: because you know how my brother is besides the fact that she can't stand your ass

Her: just know everything comes out soon

Me: I know

She gets up dusts her ass

Her: see you when I come by coz you're never out and about

She leaves

What a nosy human, Nomhle never gives up I mean ever, she can say things about you and you will end up believing them and agreeing with her.

It's Friday and I'm not too keen about that coz it means Thato will be around the whole weekend coz he's out of cash to go out, I get up and go to bed I need a rest for what's to come. I switch off the TV take a shower then go for an

afternoon nap.

And this time around I'm woken up by loud voices coming from the lounge when I check the time it's 18:40 and it's winter so it's pretty dark outside. I turn on the lights and put on my gown and head to where the noise comes from, and it's Thato and 3 of his friends, I quickly turn back but it's already too late

Thato: baby sis come say hi

I turn with a fake smile

Me: hi guys

Them: hey

Thato: come sit here

He pats his lap

Me: nah I'm good I just wanted to check on you

Him: alright I'll come tuck you in

I nod and go to bed



It's not long before he comes in

Him: are you okay?

Me: yah just cold

He takes off his shoes and gets behind me

Him: do you know just how amazing you're?

I shake my head

Him: you are baby sis, and your husband will be a lucky man, you got an amazing body you're calm and grounded every men's dream

He wraps his arm around my waist and I shift uncomfortably, see after all this time I haven't really gotten used to him touching me or any of the things that follow

Him: what? are you on your period?

I shake my head

Me: your friends are still here

Him: I'll be quick

Me: won't they get suspicious?

Him: who cares?

Ok well I do

Me: can we do this later

Him: oh come on

Before I could protest, he has my arms pinned on the bed with his one hand, here's the thing Thato is a big guy he might be 21 but he's big takes after my dad and takes gym quite seriously and well that didn't take away from his d\*ck

He's in me without any hesitation

Me: you didn't lock

Him: no one will come up here

I am stark naked and he does as he pleases at some point I thought I saw someone peaking at the door but when I look again there's nothing probably my mind playing tricks, soon enough

he gets up

Him: sleep tight baby sis

He walks out, a few minutes later I hear loud laughter and I just get up lock the door then cover my head and sleep.

\*\* I'll drop off an insert whenever I get time but will be dedicated full time after my exams\*\*

Admin loves                      You

[05/26, 20:15]      : Insert 2

I feel so heavy hearted, yes I got used to all this but when Thato is drunk he wants it rough and I can't deny him what he wants, he was drunk all weekend having his way with me while his friends were around the house buying him booze since he wasn't paid yet, I must say I am not looking forward to this coming weekend

coz he's the one getting paid I hope he goes to one of his friends place and gives me a break, he doesn't even have a girlfriend I've fully taken girlfriend responsibilities, he sees no need for one, I mean why would he?

I do my daily routine, clean, cook and binge watch a whole lot of shows sometimes do washing if there is, then take an afternoon nap or something. I go for a shower and that's when I realize I'm on my period which always ceases to amaze me, Thato never used protection with me and it's been over a year now and for whatever reason I'm not falling pregnant which is good I just hope it's Gods way of protecting me or something, I pick up my phone and call Thato

Him: baby sis

Me: mmmh hi

Him: is everything okay

Me: I....

Him: Liyakha I'm at work so cough it out

Me: I'm on my period and I don't have sanitary pads

Him: Oh, it's probably gonna be closed at the shops when I knock off and it's past my lunch time I don't know how I'm gonna get them

Me: oh I'll see what I can do

Him: mmh wait I'll call Sphiwe (one of his friends) if he's free I'll tell him to drop them off

Me: okay thank you

Him: I'll let you know if he's coming

Me: ok bye

Him: see you later

I hang up and go shower, I take longer than usual coz I'm just dragging to exit hoping as soon as I do Sphiwe would be here dropping off

what I need, the water finally goes cold and I have no choice but to go out, I wrap a towel around my waist and go to my bedroom to dry off my hair, I have a huge hard Afro and it takes forever to dry, someone buzzes at the gate I take a peek and it's Sphiwe, I wrap the towel on my head and buzz him in then go meet him at the door

Him: I've been at that stupid gate for 30 fucking minutes

Me: sorry I was in the shower

Him: how long does it take you to shower woman!

Me: I said sorry! Now do you have something for me

He looks at me and his eyes roam around my body, yes I'm still in the towel but it's just above my knee not revealing at all but his gaze makes me feel uncomfortable

He clears his throat

Him: yah sure

He hand me the plastic bag and there's three packs of pads

Me: thank you

Him: what else do you have under that towel?

Me: excuse me?

Him: oh come on you heard me

Me: I think you should leave

Him: do you really want me to

Me: yes I do, you're making me uncomfortable

Him: so screwing your own brother doesn't make you uncomfortable but I do?

I chocked on my saliva

Me: what?

Him: I saw you guys....

Me: leave!

Him: Li.....

Me: I said leave! get out! Leave

I try to push him out with tears blinding me

Him: I won't tell him if you don't

Me: get the hell out!!

He grabs both my wrists

Him: okay, okay, I'm out, but I know your dirty little secret cute face

He leaves me bomb smacked not knowing what to do, I just hope he doesn't tell anyone I mean i don't wanna be known as the girl who sleeps with her brother we all know the favors will be against me. I wipe off my tears then go fix myself.

Thato arrives when I dish up for myself and I just add his plate



Him: baby sis

Me: hey

Him: did Sphiwe get the right stuff

Me: yes thanks

He nods

Him: you seem a bit off what's wrong?

Me: argh nothing just periods

I decide not to tell him, I just don't want him thinking I was seducing his friend, maybe I was, I mean I was in a towel basically half naked maybe I sent the wrong message.

We eat in comfortable silence then head to bed.

\*\*\*\*\*

One week later

It was the weekend and sadly Thato was around with his friends including Sphiwe getting

waisted, I was in my room listening to music playing games on my phone when Thato just budged in

Him: when were you going to tell me?

He had a beer in his hand

Me: tell you what?

Him: don't act smart with me?

Me: okay now I'm really confused, what are you talking about?

Him: Sphiwe?

My eyes widen in shock

Him: oh so it is true?

Me: no, no it's...

Him: he even knows about the birth mark on your thigh

I have a huge birth mark running from the left side of my butt to my mid thigh but I didn't think

he saw it

Me: I don't know how he saw it but..

Him: oh come on Liyakha!!

He almost screams and something in me snaps

Me: why do you care? I mean we are also doing the same thing worse part is you're my fathers son, my half brother we share the same blood, so it makes it right that you're fucking me? And no one else should right?

Him: you know that's not the point

Me: then why are we arguing about it?

Him: fuck this!!

He threw the bottle across the room and walked out

I buried my head in the pillow and cried, I probably fell asleep crying coz I woke up when I heard the door banging it was Thato totally waisted, he turned on the light and came

towards me

Him: hey baby sis

I immediately cringe coz I know what's about to go down

He's on top of me in seconds and snaps the edges of my underwear and is in me before I could remind him that I'm on my period

Me: Thato!

Him: shhhhhhhh, I'm almost done

He huffs and puffs and then comes a knock through the door

Voice: hurry up it's my turn bruh!!

Ok!! what the fuck is going on here? ??

The knock is persistent and Thato is still very much still going, in my head I am contemplating how on earth I'm going to get out of this, it's quite obvious they are all going to have me for themselves, I have to think of something real

fast. How could a Thato agree to this??

[05/26, 20:16] : Insert 3

Thato finishes off and lay next to me

Me: Thato please, Bhuti I'm begging you don't let them do this

Him: I need to pay off last weeks debt for alcohol and if I use cash we'll run out of food before month end, it's just this once baby sis just take it for both our sake

Is he for real ?

Right now I have to think of something real fast

Me: how many are they?

Him: 6

My eyes widen

Me: are they gonna use protection?

Him: hell yah I'm the only one who doesn't

I nod

Me: can I take a shower first just to clean up

Him: you'll have all the time in the world for a shower after they are done

Me: it's just that I'm dripping down there and I just wanna clean up then I'm all theirs, I'm the sacrifice for us to keep well, it's the least you could do

Him: I'll let them know, 15 minutes baby sis 15 ok

I nod

He stumbles as he gets up he dresses up and walks out

It's now or never

I get up lock behind him then open the shower tap so they could think I'm actually taking one.

Good thing is the upper window doesn't have steel buglers it's tiny but it will have to do, it

must.

I take a chair and climb on it I manage to stick out my head and at this point I don't really care about my huge ass it has to fit, I feel the glass crack and dig into my back but I don't care I want out of here, I'm finally out with my torn pajama short and I run for my life, luckily the small gate isn't locked and I'm in the dark street with only streetlights on, no sign of anyone and I run and run and run until my chest burns, I stop running and walk fast I don't know where to but it's as far away from the testosterone filled house as possible, an empty can rolling startles me and I start running again until I see shops and tall buildings, I'm in town that's how far I actually ran and my house is actually on the outskirts so I really did run far. I slow down as I approach a street light I wrap my hands around my body and to try warm up it's really cold, I don't even know what time it is, I don't

have a phone or money I'm just cold and tired  
my knees are shaking as the adrenaline goes  
down, I keep walking, all the shops are closed  
it's only me, streetlights and a few cars passing  
by. I see a group of women around a fire as I  
approach I realize its hookers judging by the  
way they are dressed. Some are puffing and  
passing on a cigarette others are just making  
small talk waiting on whoever male figure  
interested, I feel like maybe I should turn back,  
maybe Thatos friends were not that bad coz  
street life for a woman seems really really hard,  
I quickly turn around

Voice: Liyakha

It's a lady voice and she definitely knows me

I remain rooted facing away from whoever

I hear footsteps as she approaches

Her: Good Lord what are you doing in the  
streets at this time of the night?



I look up and I'm met by Noziphos worried eyes( Nomhles run away sister)

I just jump on her, no we weren't that close in fact she's much older than me but I was so relieved to see a familiar face, she hugs me back and that's when I break down

Her: haibo Liyakha this late, where are your parents?

I sniff

Me: they died

I don't care to mention a father that left me, I mean he's as good as dead

Her: shhhhhh it's ok nana, you're hurt let's get you cleaned up

She holds my hand and leads me to the ladies around the fire

Lady1: haibo Zipho uyithathaphi le nkawu ( where did you get the albino)

Oh that, did I mention I'm an albino? I didn't because I don't think it's something that defines who I am, it's not the first thing I see when I look in the mirror and it never really bothered me especially because where I grew up everyone around me knew me but it wasn't an issue or always pointed out they just knew me as Liyakha and that's it, not the albino I guess they sort of got used to it

Zipho: hai stop with the nasty comments this is Liyakha my little sister

Lady2: utheni wena ungeyiyo inkawu( why aren't you albino)

They laugh

Zipho: mxm lets go Liyakha

Lady3:what about your shift?

Zipho: I'm just making sure she's safe then I'm coming back

We walk into this dodgy looking building and she leads me into her room, it's neat and clean nothing like the outside, by the looks of things she's a hooker but it's okay and not my place to judge

Zipho: you need to clean up you've got a bleeding scar on your back, I've got work to do I'll see you when I come back so we can talk okay

I nod

Her: you're safe here, lock up as soon as I exit and don't open for anyone okay

Me: okay

Her: there are clean towels and clothes in the cupboard

She leaves and I quickly get up and lock behind her, I take a bath and clean up my scar which is a bit difficult coz it's on my lower back but soon enough I'm done and I get into a cotton onesie I

found then wait for Zipho to come back but sleep takes over soon enough and I'm out. I'm woken up by a loud bang on the door it's Zipho I open up

Her: yhoo you sure can sleep girl it's 12 midday

I get up and stretch and my stomach grumbles

Her: get up and make something to eat i wanna take a nap I'm exhausted

I do exactly that while she rests.

I don't know where life is taking me this time but as long as it's far away from that hell hole . It has to be better than that right?

[05/26, 20:16] : Insert 4

I've been here for 4 days now and it hasn't been easy, some nights men would come banging on the door for Zipho and that terrified me coz I wasn't used to this but she seemed unbothered,

we lived on takeaways sometimes we would have to share only one with Zipho, she had a friend called Siphon more like a pimp and he pretty much gave orders around here but Zipho always stood up for me, I can't remember how many times Siphon said he had clients asking for me but Zipho wouldn't allow it, it was just four days in this place but it felt longer because of the drama around here.

Zipho was taking a shower and I was eating breakfast when Siphon walked in

Him: hey Blonde

Something about the way he said that rubbed me off the wrong way

Him: how are you

Me: fine

Him: no wonder Zipho is fed up with you, you've got some attitude little miss

I plain out ignored him but what he said bothered me, could she really be fed up? Who am I kidding who wouldn't be

Him: I've got an offer for you blonde, you see street life isn't for you, you're a softy and it's for hardcore women not little girls, so how about an auction?

Me: I don't mind working in an auction

He laughed so loud

Him: no no no, not working there but being sold there

Me: like me being for sale??

Him: it's for the richest men sweetheart, who will pay even millions to have you and take full responsibility, and you're totally a catch different but gorgeous, no albino has been auctioned before so you will surely be on the high bid list and I'm quite sure there are filthy rich men with albino fetish,so what do you say?

The auction is this coming weekend starting Friday evening and it happens once in like 6 months so??

Me: no there's no way.

Sipho walks in the kitchen wrapped in a towel

Her: whatever he said Liyakha it's all bull, Sipho stay away from my little sis okay

Sipho nods

Sipho: there's no milk??

Me: sorry I used the last of it

Her: arh Gosh

She bangs the fridge door

Sipho: just think about it blonde

He winks at me and gets up

Sipho: think about what?

Me: argh it's nothing important

Honestly I never imagined myself for sale but if it's for a rich man it wouldn't be that bad would it?

The following night Zipho wasn't around and I was alone didn't get an ounce of sleep the banging was really getting on my last nerve. As I tried to sleep in the wee hours of the morning there was a knock it was Siph

I got up and opened

Him: hey, whoa you don't look like you got any beauty sleep blonde what's wrong

Me:arg it's nothing, Zipho is not around

Him: I'm actually here for you, thought about my offer?

Me: Siph

Him: you'll be most likely living in a huge ass glass house, no noise with servants at your mercy not this shit hole



I bit on my lower lip

Him: so???

Me: can I think about this Siphon

Him: you don't have much time it begins tomorrow at least give me an answer so that I can handle your profile and submit it

I nod

Him: it's assurance that you'll always be taken care of

Me: I know, i know

He nods

Him: are you a virgin?

I look at him

Him: I have to know

I shake my head

Him: ok I'll come by tomorrow morning so sleep on it okay?

Me: okay

Honestly I was considering it, it wouldn't be that bad, I mean Thato was doing it with no money involved how bad could it be?

The following morning I had already made up my mind barely slept and well enough was enough, when Siphos came I confirmed and he asked me personal questions and I answered truthfully and we had to temper with my age coz I was a minor so 18 it is. He gave me Friday to totally consider my decision whether I really wanted this or not, if I was to be bought he would get 50% of the money and I was okay with that he was offering me a ticket to a good life I suppose, I kept this as a secret to Zipho coz well I didn't wanna be judged or anything not that she would matter of fact I think she would talk me out of it so I didn't tell her.

Saturday morning Zipho left and Siphos came to fetch me, I left her a note thanking her and

telling her I decided to go back home then left with Sipho. He drove a really nice car it had a cigarette smell in it, we drove out of town at some point he covered my head with a sac saying something about procedure. When we arrived I was taken away by some lady I guess also part of procedure, she took me to a room then uncovered my face, she looked really nice, smelled really feminine and dressed appropriately I don't know maybe I was expecting her to dress like a hooker or something worse, she instructed me to strip and I did till my underwear and she just giggled

Her: everything miss

I did as told and was layed on a table with my legs wide open as she waxed my pubic hair that shit is fuckin painful, then my legs and armpits, I was then moved to another room where a doctor fully examined me, checked for diseases, pregnancy and everything you can think of, after

all that I was given a silk gown that only covered my upper butt totally exposing my butt cheeks, then I was covered again and the lady instructed someone else to move me to the basement, i could see shadows passing by through the sac but nothing more, then we went down the stairs into the basement I guess. The silk gown was taken off and my arms immediately went for my boobs trying to cover them up I felt extremely uncomfortable, the sac was removed and I was in a rectangular glass with the spotlight on me, I could see tapping feet in expensive looking shoes and lit cigarettes but I couldn't see the actual people that were about to bet on me, the auction began a deep slow male voice was conducting it, I thought it would be those fast people who ramble and you can't even hear what they saying but it wasn't, and the bet began at R50 000, I thought I heard wrong but nope the bets went as far as R500 000, all I did was turn my

head towards the male voice that spoke hoping I could get a glimpse of his face or whatever but nothing, I just couldn't wait to get out of here and it seemed it was gonna take a while as it seems everyone wanted themselves some albino booty.

[05/26, 20:16] : Insert 5

I've been standing in this glass thing and I'm beginning to feel cold, the bet just kept going up we were now approaching a million and I was shivering I just wanted these old man to stop quarreling about buying me and let the last guy take me already, I've even learned which voice sat where until one new voice spoke

Him: 5 million

It went quiet and I actually burst out and laughed I thought it was a joke but no

Auctioneer: going once, twice Sold

He banged the table

Suddenly people started walking out and I was left with the guy who bought me, he was still in the darkness with only his shoes showing and I just shivered uncontrollably, one because it was cold and two because I was super nervous

He stood up and took a step forward but still his face wasn't showing, he stood there for sometime and walked towards me taking off his blazer, it's a white man who obviously takes gym seriously probably in his mid thirties I think, he puts the blazer on my shoulders it reaches right below my but cheeks, he takes my hand and we walk out to some reception area, he takes two Black brief cases and places them on the counter, the reception lady nods

Lady: have a good day sir

He never let go of my hand, we walk to the

parking lot and there's a black Range Rover I don't know what model it was but damn it was breathtaking, a black guy stands outside and opens the door for us, he lets me in first then follows after me, the black guy is our driver, my buyer hasn't said a word in this car, he's busy on his iPad typing whatever. I'm feeling sleepy, probably because I haven't slept a wink in 2 days. I rest my head on the window and I'm gone. I'm woken up by a soft pat on my shoulder, he wakes me then walks out the car and I follow.

The mansion is something I've never seen before, it is absolutely breathtaking, whoever built this deserves an award, it has a water fountain in a circle near the driveway with a fish pond, the yard looks endless, it's totally amazing, the grass is green which is weird because it's winter, he walks in front and I follow he slides open this huge ass looking door walk in and loosens his tie, the inside of

this house is something else, there's a touch of silver and white with art I'm bought back to earth when he cleared his throat, he was on the staircase that looked like it was floating on air, heh some people are abundantly blessed, he walks up the stairs and I follow

He leaves the door of a bedroom open and I walk in, he opens the shower tap and takes out towels putting them on the bed with a robe and walks out, rude much.

I take off his blazer and take a shower, sweet Jesus even the water feels different or is it just my imagination. I walk out and dry off, there's only one towel so I use it to also dry my Afro, he clears his throat behind me, mind you I'm butt naked I quickly grab the robe and cover up

Him: I'm Logan

Me: I'm Liyakha Booi

He nods



Me: just Logan?

Him: dinner will be served in an hour

He walks out totally ignoring my question

I finish drying up and wear the robe then walk downstairs, the house is too big I wanna explore and tour it but I also don't wanna get lost, it smells amazing in here, I walk to the kitchen and there are two chefs busy

Me: hi

Them: good evening mam

Okay that was too formal

Me: I'm Liyakha

Chef 1: pleasure to meet you mam

Yhoo I give up, this conversation is not going anywhere

Dinner is served it's just me and Mr Logan on this Long ass table, he's on the far end of the

table and so am I. It's only cutlery sounds in this room

Me: I don't have any clothes to wear

He looks up at me and stares at me for sometime then back at his plate

Him: where are you going?

Me: nowhere

Him: so what are clothes for?

Me: so I can dress up I guess

Him: I'll get Vusi to take you shopping tomorrow

I nod

He finishes up and leaves me there

Haibo this guy, no goodnight no nothing

I also finish and take the same way I got here back to that bedroom and he's not here, I strip off the robe get in bed and I can honestly say that was the most peaceful sleep I've had in a

long time alone, I guess we are not sharing a bed with Mr Logan I don't know why I thought we would it's not like I'm his girlfriend or something, I woke up the following morning with a note next to me with 4 numbers and a black card on top, I freshened up then went downstairs to the kitchen and breakfast was served, I ate alone I haven't seen Mr Logan anywhere in the house. Vusi( the driver) came to inform me the car was ready, I even forgot I'll be going shopping today busy wondering where Mr Logan is

Me: let me go change

That was stupid because I had no clothes yet. I went into the bedroom next to the one I slept in and went through the closet, there were just a lot of basketball jerseys, I took one and it looked like a dress on me but it has to do, Mr Logan doesn't look like a basketball person though

I took the card and memorized the pin then went to the mall with Vusi , I bought everything I would need some I didn't even need but the shopping adrenaline was just too much, I swiped the card countless times hoping it would decline but nothing, I bought a lot of snacks and slurp chips, I bought different kinds of chocolates and tons of gummy worms my dad used to buy me those when he returned from work arg I quickly brushed that thought out, Vusi was with me the entire time helping me with the bags. We drove back to the Logan mansion not because there was nothing to buy anymore but because I was tired.

We carried the bags in and still Mr Logan wasn't back. I took everything out and scattered it on the bed and just layed on top it was like a dream, When I was satisfied i packed up my things in the closet, later on I had dinner alone then went to bed still with no Mr Logan. I'm

woken up when someone gets in behind me. By the cologne I can tell it's Him

Me: Mr Logan

Him: shhhh

I can already feel his warm rod on my ass

Him: have you done anal before?

He whispers in my ear

Me: no

I quickly answered

He inhales my hair and quickly pulls my ass out towards him, he positions himself to my entrance and he is dripping I can feel him smear his pre-cum around my nookie and for whatever reason I'm not scared just a little nervous and uncomfortable coz it's the first time he's touching me and I've never done a white man before, not that I've done any man besides Thato

Him: bend a little for me please

Did he just say please?

I bend my back a little sticking my ass out, he's gentle when he thrusts in but there's tiny discomfort coz he's a bit big, he lifts my one leg up and thrusts all the way in and I moan loud

Him: talk dirty to me sweetheart

Honestly I didn't know what to say Thato preferred silence and now I have to talk dirty? he spanks my ass too hard and I scream.

Me: ah Fuck

He brushes the spot he spanked and spanks me again and I yelp

Him: yeah you're getting there pumpkin

Really?? pumpkin?? I felt like laughing

His one hand is on my shoulder pulling me down so I could slam hard on him I swear I felt him in my womb

He reaches for my boobs and squeezes as he groans his release

He pulls out and leaves me on the bed and walks out, I get up as leaking as I am and take a shower then go to bed. It's only then that I felt absolutely dirty, I felt horrible, I took my gummy worm and they reminded me of my father, if only he didn't abandon me I wouldn't be in this situation, I cried myself to sleep that night hoping things were different

\*\*\*\*Let's share fam, mention, like and comment\*\*\*\*

[05/26, 20:16] : Insert 6

I woke up the following morning, did my hygiene process, then went downstairs for breakfast, the chefs served us and honestly I was craving pap and milk, I just played around with my food

while Mr Logan enjoyed his breakfast with a glance at the news paper from time to time, he was a beautiful man to be honest, with dark hair and minimal beard, Long fingers and quite tall with blue eyes. He cleared his throat and that's when I realized I was staring

Me: sorry

I ate just a little then took my plate to the kitchen, the staff wasn't there so I took a pot with hopes of cooking umphokoqo( pap) luckily there was milk in the fridge, Mr Logan walked in

Him: the food not to your liking?

Me: no, I

I sighed

Me: I'm just craving pap and milk

Him: should ask Andrew( the chef) to make it for you

Me: I don't mind making it



He nodded and walked away

I continued with my pap and just the smell of it made my mouth water, when I was done I dished up in a large bowl sat down on the kitchen stool the dining area seemed far gosh did I enjoy, nice thing about me is I don't just gain weight and I've been maintaining my size 36 coz of the ass and curves 28 coz I've got a tiny waist and just medium pointy boobs and I'm quite happy about my body. as I was cleaning up my bowl Mr Logan walked in, he handed me three pills

Him: you must take one now, at lunch and dinner

Me: what are these for?

Him: emergency pills, I just went through your profile and you're not on any contraceptive and we must get that sorted soon, I would prefer you go for the three year plan, I'll book an

appointment for tomorrow Vusi will take you

I nodded

He walked away

I drank the pill then headed to my bedroom, I should get a phone tomorrow when I go for the appointment I still had the card.

I was so full I climbed into bed and slept

I woke up when I felt eyes on me like someone was staring at me and indeed when I opened my eyes Mr Logan was staring at me standing by the window with his hands in his pockets I was a bit startled

Him: follow me

I did just that and he led me to a room at the far end of the passage, he got in and I followed, it was dimmed lit with sex toys almost everywhere I don't think I've seen so many dildos in one place they made me dizzy

Him: take off your clothes

He walked to a chair at the corner of the room and sat there, I took off my hoodie

Him: slowly and sexy

I did my best to be as slow as possible but this sexy thing wasn't for me

Him: come here

I walked towards him

He lay my upper body on his lap facing down, he had a thing for my ass, he kept lightly spanking it and let it jiggle and he would groan from the back of his throat and I could feel his member getting hard

Him: fuck I love this view

The spanking got harder and so does the groaning

Him: I want you to call me daddy when we fuck okay?

Me: ok

He made me stand and he took off his clothes

Him: kneel

I did

He walked to me while he kept stroking his member, he took handcuffs behind me and cuffed me

Him: open wide

I did

Him: stick your tongue out

I did

Gosh that was the first time I did that and i hatted every minute of it, I kept gagging until he finished

He lifted me up and placed me on a bench and made kneel my ass was up still hand cuffed

Him: we gonna try something new okay

I nodded

He lubricated my behind and I knew what was coming

He firstly tried to insert his finger and that was a bit painful and uncomfortable

Him: relax sweetheart just relax okay

I nodded, his finger went fully in and he pulled it out and tried with his rod and I honestly couldn't I tried to take it but that wasn't my cup of tea,

I screamed so loud it startled him

Him: sorry, I'm sorry did it hurt?

Is he for real? Of course it hurts I just nodded

Him: should I try again?

Me: if you want to

Him: do you want me to?

I shook my head

Him: then we won't, okay?

Me: okay

Him: I want you to get on top

He undid the handcuffs and led me to that chair he sat and held my waist down to him so I could be on top he used the lubricant on me again and sat me on his member, what I've learned about Mr Logan is he loves touching me, anywhere and everywhere, when he finished he pulled my head down to his chest and brushed my hair back

Him: I've never done this before

I try to look up at his face but he hold my head in place on his chest

Him: I lost my wife 5 years ago and nothing else made me happy in this world, I've tried a lot of things even dating again but it just didn't happen, my only son left for UK soon after his mom died, this was all a friend of mines idea, this room was my man cave before it was

turned into all this, the auction was also his idea and my last try to feel better, alive again

Me: did it help?

Him: I don't know, but when I saw you I felt again you're different and maybe the difference that I need right now, you looked innocent in that glass and even though I fought the decision to buy you it would've been a waste of time going there and coming back with no one even though I didn't think I would actually come back with someone, your laughter when I said five million was refreshing

I sigh

Him: you're young I'm 47 years old and I feel stuck and lost

Did he just say 47 I thought he wasn't a day older than 35, talk about good genes

He lifted me off him stood up and walked out, back to his cold self again

I dressed up then went to my bedroom. My dad is 49 years old he's 2 years older than Mr Logan. I wonder if he's also buying girls my age out there to please him wherever he is, does he even think of me, do I even cross his mind even for a second? . How would he feel if he knew his little girl sold her self to the highest bidder?. Arg whatever, my birthday is coming up in a month maybe I should buy myself something nice or do something different maybe cut my hair

[05/26, 20:17] : Insert 7

I woke up with a note stating my doctors appointment was at 10, I checked my clock and it was 08:30, I got up freshened up and put on my pink knitted oversized jersey with thigh high boots then roughed up my Afro and I was good to go. I went downstairs and there was no sign of Mr Logan, breakfast was prepared I quickly ate then went searching for Vusi and found him



by the driveway smoking

Me: hey I'm ready

He threw away the cigarette and we got in the car

Me: why are you always so serious

He looked at me through the rear view mirror

Him: I'm not mam

Me: yes you're and stop with the mam I'm not that old

he chuckled

We arrived at the doctors just on time and I wasn't even questioned I guess Mr Logan handled everything coz they just explained the side effects of the implant and given some pain medication for when the anesthetic fades then a waterproof plaster was put on my arm and I was good to go. We went past the iPhone store and I opted for iPhone 6, I was given a guide on

how to use it and set up my iCloud and then that was it Vusi drove us back to the mansion. When we arrived there was a car parked on the driveway

I got off and walked in the house there was this tall white guy busy in the kitchen with his headphones on he didn't even hear me walk in, he was only in his track pants humming a song

I just stood there and watched, his back was well built i could see his tight muscles flexing as he swayed to the music and then he turned around and saw me then took off his headphones, he was gorgeous he looked a little like Mr Logan so cute with his stuffed mouth and a sandwich in hand, he had blonde hair, shaved on the sides and tide up he didn't have any beard, grey eyes, pink bottom lip

Him: can I help you?

He had an accent, could be the son Mr Logan

told me about

Me: no I live here

Him: yeah right, listen we are not hiring any maids at the moment so try next door

Rude much?

Me: no I'm not looking for a job I stay here with Mr Logan

Him: Mr Logan you say?

I nodded

Him: so what are you doing in the main house coz maids stay outside unless on duty

Me: I'm not a maid

Him: then what is it that you do around here?

I sighed

Me: nothing

I walked away heading to my bedroom

Him: I don't know what drug you're on miss but you're lost, I don't even know how security let you enter in the first place but get your melanin less skin back to wherever you come from

Me: melanin less skin??

I won't lie that kind of hurt

Him: it's a good thing your ears are working

Haibo bethuna what did I do to this ugly guy?

I continued walking the next thing he grabs my arm

Me: ouch you're hurting me!

He looked at me in the eye and let go

I ran up the stairs into my bedroom nxa talk about man with no manners

I just kept going through my phone and taking pictures then I let it charge and took a nap, I'm woken up by a knock on the door it's Mr Logan

Him: dinner is ready

Me: I'm not hungry

Him: that wasn't a request

I put on my sleepers then went to the dining area

the rude bastard was also here, great!

I pulled out a chair and sat, it was quiet

Mr Logan: Miguel this is Liya, Liya it's Miguel my son

I nodded

Miguel: what is she to you?

Mr L: if I wanted you to know son I would've mentioned it

Miguel roughly kicked back the chair and left

Me: I'll be in my room

Mr L: sit down and finish your food

That was a command

I sat my huge ass down and the rest of the dinner was awkward as hell

I quickly finished up and went to bed

\*\*\*\*\*

woke up when I heard noise from the room next to mine

When I checked the time it was 05:15

Oh my God talk about bad timing

I got up and grabbed a gown

I knocked for sometime before he opened, there were clothes on the floor

Me: what's with the noise?

Him: oh fuck off

Me: maybe if you told me what you're looking for I could help

Him: yeah right as if you know anything about

basket ball jerseys

Me: oh that..

Him: what?

Me: I...

Him: oh hell no

He pushed past me and went to my room where he turned my closet upside down searching for his jersey when he found it he went out banging the door

Me: and the mess??!!

It seems my life just got harder with the racist and albino-phonic Miguel around. Can I get a break already

[05/26, 20:17] : Insert 8

It was my birthday and I woke up in a really good mood there was nothing obvious to be

happy about but I was glad to have seen another year, we all know how short life can be for an albino. I slept in my cotton underwear the previous night something about cotton underwear's made me happy, don't ask, I also can't point it out but I think it's the way they felt on my skin. I played music on my phone with my headphones on and just danced around my room in my own little world when I felt a tap on my shoulder I was stunned

Him: Jesus Christ you got me all worked up with those headphones on

I grabbed a t-shirt

Me: sorry

Him: new rule, no earphones in the house

Me: but...

Him: it's not up for discussion, I've been knocking on that door for over 5 minutes



Me: it was just 5 minutes

Him: a lot could've happened in that 5 minutes, you could've hanged yourself or drowned yourself

I don't know but he said the last words as a whisper, who drowned?

Me: sorry Mr Logan

He just walked out, what a way to start my birthday

I took a shower and dressed in my tight below the knee dress that looked like it was splashed in different paint colors and my fluffy pink rabbit sleepers I was all shades of color you could think of and I looked good it's my birthday I'm allowed

I walked downstairs and as usual it was breakfast and no one was at the table which was perfect for me I was in no mood to deal with Grumpy Mr L or his waste of breath son, I

had pancakes and chocolate syrup with coffee  
and it was amazing until Mr basketball showed  
up

Him: hey princess did the rainbow throw up on  
you?

See what I mean totally a waste of breath

I ignored him and continued with my breakfast

He sat opposite me

Him: don't you know those colors make you  
look even more un-human?, I'm not even sure  
whether that's a word but it seems best to  
describe you at this very moment

I could feel my tears blinding my sight

Him: oh come on....

Me: just shut the hell up!!! If you have nothing  
nice to say to me then don't say anything at all.  
Just shut up Mogul SHUT UP!!

Tears were already running down my cheeks I

took my pancakes and stomped out of that dining area

Him: it's Miguel missy!!!

Shit this guy is getting on my last nerve!

I banged the door got in bed and stuffed my face with chocolate syrup

I decided to change my dress and wear my matching tracksuits and just stay in bed, only good thing about this house was the WiFi, so I went on YouTube and searched videos about makeup for albino people underneath all this "melanin less skin" was a 17 year old girl. I must have fallen asleep well that's all I do around here. Wake up, shower eat, eat and eat then sleep. Maybe I should go back to school I don't know what Mr Logan will think about it but I had to mention it to him I mean i don't do anything around here so might as well put my time to good use. I woke up around dinner time

and went to get my food then went back to my room thank goodness Mr L wasn't around he would insist I sit on that stupid table and pretend like all is well with his goblin of a son.

I was just laying in bed when a knock came through it was Mr Logan

Him: come with me

He was totally disoriented, with his tie hanging loosely around his neck and the upper buttons of his shirt open

I stood up and followed, he went back to that room. I don't know but something about this room made me cringe

He sat on that chair and I just stripped and went to him

He took off his tie and loosely tied it around my mouth, he then held both my wrists behind me, brought his face close to my boobs and alternated teasing my nipples it felt weird coz it

made my nookie tingle for the very first time, the sound that came out of my mouth was absolutely foreign.

He kissed the space between my boobs and inhaled, then unexpectedly he lifted me up and led us to the bed

Him: I'm sorry about this

He took a whoop turned me around without warning I felt the first whip followed by several more, it wasn't too painful but sure as hell left marks. The next thing he's all over my back kissing me from the back of my shoulder to my whipped buttocks. He lubbed me up and Hoover on top of me

Me: let's try

Him: I don't wanna hurt you

Me: you won't

Honestly I don't even know what I was getting

myself into but it's what I signed up for, to fulfill his fetish and he seemed to be anal sex.

Him: tell me when to stop okay?

I nodded

He started off trying to push in and hell is what it felt like, I felt like he was ripping me apart while he kept on groaning and tightly grabbing on my waist, it didn't go on for long soon he pulled out and flopped on top of me that's when I let my tears flow. He quickly got off me

Him: I'm sorry Liya

I just couldn't hold it in it really hurt. He unexpectedly scooped me up and cuddled me like a baby

Him: I'm so sorry

I cried for a while in his arms then he gently put me on the bed and went out I lay on my side and faced away from the door few minutes later

he came back fully dressed with a bottle of water and pills

Him: these will help numb the pain

I took them and downed them

He scooped me up again and covered me with a towel then took me to my room, he literally hushed me like a baby till I fell asleep.

I was woken up by someone covering my back when I looked up it was Miguel I quickly got up and pulled the sheet to my chest

Me: what the hell are you doing in my room?

Him: who hurt you Lee?

Lee?? Really now we down to nicknames? From melanin less to Lee? Fuck you!

Him: I don't care about the scar on your back but the whips look fresh

Me: get the hell out, just leave me alone

Him: did he do this to you?

Me: I said leave Miguel, LEAVE MY ROOM!!

He ran his fingers through his hair then face and he walked out.

Acting like he cares when all he did since he arrived was treat me like shit nxa.

[05/26, 20:17] : Insert 9

2 days later

I've been stuffing myself with what I had in my room, from Biltong to sweets to cookies, I didn't feel like leaving my room, I know Mr L respected that coz he had the spare keys to this room he would've come in anytime but he only knocked and asked whether I was okay he said he just wanted me to respond then he would be out of my hair, at first it was every five minutes then fifteen, as in now it's fifteen minutes later



and I'm expecting him to knock and sure  
enough he does

Me: I'm ok

Him: please open up

Me: but I'm okay

Him: please

I got up and put on my gown then opened he  
wheeled in a tea trolley

Him: I brought food eat up

Me: I'm not hungry

Him: I don't remember asking

I sat down carefully not to hurt myself, yes it  
was still a bit numb

Him: does it still hurt?

I nodded

Him: Maybe I should take you to the doctor

Me: it's okay I'll be fine

Him: know what dress up we're going I'll check their next available appointment

Me: I...

He left me there didn't even wanna hear me out, yes it was sore but not that much I was ok

I just sat there and finished up my food few minutes later he was back

Me: Mr Logan I'm..

Him: the appointment is in 30 minutes and you're still not dressed

It was useless arguing with him coz he already had car keys in hand

I dressed up in leggings and oversized jersey with ugs and we left, it was weird seeing him behind the wheel

We arrived and were attended to immediately

Dr: Good day Sir

He shook his hand

Dr: ma'm

I nodded

Dr: how can I help

Me: it's really nothing Doc just that Mr Logan is fussing over nothing

Mr L: we tried anal sex two days back and she's still uncomfortable with sitting and other stuff

The doctor looked at me then back at Mr L, my cheeks where burning I was so embarrassed, the way he just bluntly said that

Dr: ummm, what seems to be wrong miss?

Me: nothing

Mr L: it's either you're gonna talk or he's gonna take a look himself

Me: it's really nothing

Dr: please go behind the curtain take off your clothes and put on the gown

My eyes popped was he really gonna take a look

Me: it's just a bit swollen and numb down there whenever I sit or poop it hurts

Dr: any bleeding?

Me: not anymore

Mr Logan was staring at me

Dr: I'll give you some ointment and pills if you see anything weird please don't hesitate to come in, I would also suggest that if you were to try again use a lot of water base lubes ok

That's it we were dismissed

I couldn't even look at Mr L, he led me to the car and drove off he was quiet and focusing on the road and I just looked out the window

Him: why didn't you tell me to stop

I shrugged

Him: I would appreciate it if you used words

Me: I don't know I just thought it's what I was bought for

I could see his jaw flexing and his hold tightening on the steering wheel

Him: why didn't you tell me about the bleeding earlier

Me: it wasn't too much I think it was due to the stretching you know when you're constipated it was nothing to worry about

The rest of the drive was quiet we drove past milky lane and I was really craving ice cream I guess I stared for long coz he drove in

Me: I'm...

Him: hurry up I have a meeting in 25 minutes

I quickly got off then I remembered I didn't have my purse with

Me: I...

He already had his card out

I ran into the shop and bought different flavors of magnum and one sweet cone ice cream then went back

He drove to the mansion

I got off put the rest of my ice creams in the fridge then walked to my room, Miguel's door was open as soon as he saw me he shut the door in my face

Jeez!!!

Mr L walked in right after me

Him: you forgot your prescription in the car

Me: thank you

Him: can you promise me one thing

I nodded

He looked at me

Me: yes

Him: just promise to tell me if you're uncomfortable about something or if there's anything you don't like

Me: I will

He nodded

Me: can i ask you something

He looked at me

Me: I..

I played with my fingers

Him: I'm waiting

Me: I wanna go back to school

Him: I thought you were done with school

Me: no I had to drop out due to some issues

Him: what issues?

Me: it's a long story

Him: the profile I have of you says you finished school

Me: I didn't

Him: what else is a lie on that profile

Me: nothing

Him: how old are you

Me: just turned 19

I couldn't say well when you bought me I was 16 and just turned 17 could I? I mean Sfiso was very clear about the age I couldn't risk it

He nodded

Me: so about school?

Him: home school would do

I jumped on him and gave him a tight hug not that he felt anything coz he just stood there

Me: oh my are you serious?

Him: I would be if you got off me



Geez back to his cold self

Me: thank you

He nodded and walked out. I took a shower applied the ointment then drank my pills, I put on my short pajamas and my gown on top then went downstairs for my ice cream when I walked past the lounge Mr L was with two other guys one black and the other white they stopped talking and looked my way

Me: sorry hi

Black guy: hello to you too vanilla

Yhoo I am so fed up with the nicknames now I'm vanilla? What next? Snow White??

The way he looked at me made me body conscious I tied up the front of my gown then walked to the kitchen

I took my ice cream as I head back I heard the black guy speak so like any other sane person I

eavesdrop

B guy: how long is her contract with you?

Mr L: didn't draw up one

B guy: I say you must I wanna trade when you're done with her

Mr L: Sizwe you know I was never comfortable with this to begin with, she's still young man even I feel guilty when I touch her

Sizwe: probably because it's your first wait until you buy another one but damn I got to have her Logan

Mr L: whatever man

I quickly walked back to my room

So this is a trading thing for them? They speak of me as some piece of furniture or object to be sold mxm.

That night I went through the internet just wanted to get a gist of what and how home

schooling worked, it was past midnight when I decided to go for another round of ice cream. I didn't bother with the gown coz everybody was probably asleep

I was barefoot when I walked to the kitchen the lights were off I took a glass just above my head then turned on the lights soon as I turned around a topless Miguel on the kitchen stool startled me I dropped the glass mistakenly stepped on it and felt it pierce right through my skin

Me: Jesus Christ

I screamed

With the other foot I limped away from the broken glass and sat down to take off the one on my foot when I felt Miguel's hand on my leg I quickly yanked it off

Him: relax I just wanna help

He lifted my foot

Him: I'm gonna get the first aid kit stay here

As if I had somewhere to go with glass on my foot

He came back and wiped off the blood with a disinfectant then pulled out the pieces of glass under my foot and put on the bandage, then he unexpectedly grabbed my waist and pulled me up that was just too close and my erect nipples poking through my pj top in contact with his bare chest didn't help at all, no I wasn't turned on I was just cold remember I was on the floor the entire time, he held on a bit too long even after I was on my feet until someone cleared their throat it was none other, Miguel let go.

Me: Sorry Mr Longan i broke the glass and mistakenly stepped on it and Miguel helped

Him: are you okay

I nodded

Me: yes I'm fine

Miguel walked away

Mr L: can you walk?

Me: yes

Him: go to bed then I'll get one of the staff members to take care of this

I nodded then went to my room. and no I didn't think there was nothing to think about, I just went under the covers and slept. Who am I kidding? What just happened???

[05/26, 20:17] : Insert 10

One week later

Well the wound on my foot was healing quite well, and also now I could sit and do number 2 with little to none discomfort, it's safe to say Mr L haven't touched me since that day honestly I don't know whether I was pleased about it or just worried that he was considering trading me,

I had just came out of a shower when I found him sitting on my bed

Me: good morning Mr Logan

Him: I'm going away this weekend for business

Me: oh

He nodded

Me: Mr Logan

He looked at me

Me: mmmh you haven't, I mean we haven't done anything since last time, you hardly say anything to me, is it because you're considering what your friend said the other day

Him: eavesdropping is rude Liya

He got up and walked out

Haibo this guy didn't answer my question, I deserved to know right? So I ran after him, it was the first time ever walking into his room

and it felt like a little heaven if I must say, it was pure white everything even the linen on his bed and there were pictures of a woman on the wall which I guessed were his deceased wife, I found it weird that after 5 years he still had his wife's pictures up on the wall but I guess we handle death and mourning differently, this room made me feel like I was in another world it had a glass wall facing the never ending trees I didn't even know there were these many trees on this side of the house, he was standing there facing away taking off his shirt and that's the first time I saw the dragon tattoo cascading down his back it had different colors almost looked alive

Me: are you going to sell me to your friend?

Him: Jesus Liya don't sneak up on me like that

Well I wasn't sneaking up

Me: sorry

Him: I don't know

Me: oh

Him: was that all?

Why is this guy so cold?

I turned around and walked out, maybe this is my destiny to be a human sex toy, I mean Thato saw me as one and now when Mr L is done with me I'll be passed on to another man who'll also please himself with me, you know we are all born with a purpose to serve on this earth and maybe this is mine there's no use fighting what's meant for you. I really didn't cry I just took my phone and for the first time since I got here decided to have a house tour if Mr L's room looks that good there could be better looking rooms than the one I sleep in, the mansion has 3 floors and I was on the second one, i made my way up to the third floor and the first thing I walked into was a mini gallery,



paintings, drawings just art had a 3D painting of the late wife as the center piece I suppose he really loved her I don't blame him though the woman was gorgeous with blonde curly hair, grey eyes and pink lips she looked more like Miguel, I walked to the next room and there was a cinema, then a pool area, then a basketball court then a room that looked like a library it made me wonder what exactly Mr L did I never really asked, The next room I tried to open was locked which I found a bit strange considering the fact that all the other rooms were open probably were he kept his "private stuff" I walked back and thankfully found my way it was quiet down here I went outside and even Vusi wasn't around it was only the security detail at the gate I then walked back I figured Mr L had already left so I went through the fridge and there was packed food enough for 2 days I guess the staff wasn't around as well, so I just dished up and watched T.V, I was fast

asleep when I heard the kitchen door slam and I quickly walked out it was Miguel starting his car, he can't possibly leave me alone in this huge ass house

Me: where are you going?

He just slowly reversed towards the gate

Me: you can't leave me alone

Him: oh please stop being dramatic the security guys are here

Me: I'll be all alone in the house what if it's haunted

He continued reversing out

I sat down on the drive way and cried he stopped got out and stood in front of me

Him: stop being a cry baby

Me: it's fine leave Mogul I'll be just fine I'm sure you'll be pleased to find me hanging on the ceiling

That seemed to take him back a little

Him: it's Miguel, look I'm going to a party I'll be back at midnight see it will just be a couple of hours

Me: take me with you

Him: hell no!

Me: please Miguel please I held his legs

Him: dressed like that?

Me: I'll go change

Him: I'll be late

Really? Like anyone has ever been late to a party.

Me: I'll change in the car let me just take my clothes

Him: 5 minutes

I quickly ran into the house and pulled out a purple oversized knitted jersey and black thigh

high flat boots then ran out he was already at the gate I got in at the back and he drove off

I had my long sleeve underneath so I just put on the jersey and changed the sneakers

We arrived and it was another mansion with expensive looking cars parked on the driveway it wasn't that packed I guess I expected cars to be overflowing even on the outside, Miguel walked out first and I followed that's when I noticed the jersey was a bit too short, it covered just below my butt it was my first time wearing it and I thought like the rest of the jerseys it would come down to my mid thigh but I guess not, I followed behind Miguel as we walked into the lounge there were ladies not just any ladies drop dead gorgeous faces with rich looking hair and makeup on brows perfectly done I felt so out of place with my gold-ish Afro and clean face with lip balm.

Miguel: hello ladies

He kissed their cheeks

Them: hey

Him: where are the guys?

Lady1: at the back

He got up and walked out leaving me there not knowing what to do, you know sometimes you never know what to do around white people coz they are so damn sensitive and somewhat intimidating especially the bunch I was facing right now

Lady1 decided to put me out of my misery

Her: come join us

I went to sit on the couch she went on introducing the others honestly I don't even remember their names was calculating what to say next

Lady2: what's your name?

Me: Liyakha

Lady3: oh she's the Lee we've been hearing about

Me: hearing about??

Lady4: argh it's nothing to worry yourself about

They continued to chat while I just went through my phone checking absolutely nothing but pretended like I had a lot to do it started filling up lots of people coming in and I was relieved to spot one black person it made me a bit comfortable

The guys walked in with cooler boxes

Guy 1: oh damn Lees here, why didn't you mention you were bringing her along

Guy2: she is gorgeous bruh you weren't kidding

Miguel seemed pissed

Him: ladies let's take this party to the pool area there's enough space out there

They got up and I followed suit

The pool was almost magical it lit green from the inside with pool chairs on the sides and few camping chairs with a bun fire and some other guys roasting marshmallows which I found interesting coz I never roasted one before only saw such things in movies, I walked towards the bun fire and joined the guys

Me: can I have one?

The black guy was there

B.guy: sure

He gave me one on a stick it was sticky and warm but nice, smooth and sweet

Him: I'm Lindo

Me: Liyakha

Him: nice to meet you

Me: same here

Miguel walked towards us

Him: the other girls are over there

Me: I know

I just dismissed him and continued to chat with Lindo

He was tall and well built which I assumed he also played basketball

I decided to leave coz Miguel was making things a little uncomfortable for me

The girls were drinking ciders

Girl1: what you drinking?

Me: I don't drink.

Her: you kidding right

Me: no

Her: we gotta initiate you. Girls!!

Oh my word the next thing I know I'm downing shot after shot and I've loosed up a bit not even pulling the jersey down anymore I was care free



and we were laughing, at what exactly? I can't tell

Lindo came and sat next to me and we were just talking until a tipsy Miguel showed up

Miguel: hey bruh I wouldn't sit that close to her if I were you

Lindo: we're just talking Miguel nothing much

Miguel forced his way between me and Lindo and sat, honestly I'm done with his lame ass

we all sat in a circle surrounding the fire until of course white people and their silly games, it was the dare game and it went around until one of the guys dared Miguel to take a shot on my boobs or they would strip him naked for the rest of the part he was sitting next to me he turned and looked at me

Him: I can't strip Lee it's cold

Me: it's just one shot

Guy1: 3 shots on her boobies and we good

The other guys cheered him on

Miguel looked at me and I nodded, don't ask why it was probably the liquor but really there's no harm right?

They got three shots lined up and I lowered my jersey enough so the shot can balance but it didn't coz for one I didn't have a bra on I tried to hold my boobs in place

Guy2: hands off only Miguel can touch

Miguel: now you're pushing it Randy

Randy: either that or you go naked

Miguel looked at me and I didn't say anything

Him: sorry

He unexpectedly grabbed my boobs the lady on my other side placed the shots in the middle and he took one after another and quickly let me go

I was dumbstruck honestly I couldn't move

The game continued like nothing happened and I think I sobered up a bit suddenly I was thirsty

I got up and went in the house grabbed a glass and gulp down the water when suddenly someone turned me around grabbed my waist pulled me to his hard chest one hand on the side of my face and kissed me, I honestly couldn't believe it I froze on the spot until he pushed me to the wall and lifted my leg

Him: fuck Lee

he was as if glued to me that's how close he was, he kept groaning and grinding on me, I felt his hard crotch on my front, His hand went under my jersey on the small of my back and brought me closer as if I wasn't close enough it is when someone cleared their throat when he quickly let go turned around and walked towards the exit I followed behind, he opened

the car door and walked in and I did the same, he drove to the mansion no one said anything it was pin dropping silent in this car and suddenly so hot

He drove into the mansion walked in the house and I followed he went into his room banged the door and locked and I went into mine and locked took off my boots got into bed and it was lights out.

[05/26, 20:18] : Insert 11

My head feels heavy ,my lips dry as the Kalahari, I sit up and my head is spinning I feel like needles are stuck on my head. I check my phone and it's 1pm for some reason I think I lost my legs mobility, I'm hungry and I need painkillers but I can't keep my head balanced so I fall back on the pillow and sleep, I'm woken up by one of the maids

Her: sorry ma'm Miguel said I should check on you and give you these

She hands me a tray full of all the greasy stuff and two tablets I don't even ask what the pills are I drink them first before I go for the food

Me: thank you

She nods and walks out

When I take the first bite on the bacon sandwich I'm sold it feels like I've been starved for years I eat up almost everything on the tray and burp right after drinking my fizzy drink. The time is now 16:15 I get up and take a cold shower put on my leggings and tank top then take the plates to the kitchen. Last night was fun the ladies weren't that bad company at all.

\*\*\*\*\*

Miguel

I've tried, yes I've tried to just stay away from her, not think of her or giggle at the thought of her turning pink right in front of my eyes every time I'm about to say something, I don't know what it is but I've been trying to bury it deep with all the bad things I've said to her but last night I couldn't, I thought it was lust and would fade as time goes but every time I'm around her I feel otherwise, I know it's childish but every time I'm around her I feel like a child my heart is almost in my throat and I have to focus on my breathing for some reason, her forever blinking light brown eyes haunt my every dream, I'm a 26 year old man that feels like a lovesick dumbstruck 16 year old. Yes 26, my parents had me when they were young talk about high school sweethearts they were both 21 when they had me and life was roses and all until mom's incident and my resentment towards my

dad well that's story for another day. I've been waiting for Lee to come downstairs for breakfast but nothing, I thought she'll make it to lunch but still, so I asked Petunia to take food up to her and some pills she must've really drank hard. I only slept for 4 hours woke up drank lots of water then went for a jog and I was all good, I couldn't stop reminiscing about the kiss though her soft skin on my fingers, the warmth of her front snug up close to mine, her breath fanning my face her lips so soft and sweet against mine, shit! this had to stop she wasn't mine, I mean I don't know the nature of her relationship with my dad but I've never seen them touch or anything related to being a couple, what puzzles me though is the marks I saw on her butt the other day, well I went to her room to apologize for the nasty comments I said about her dress and all that led her to crying but when I walked in, half of her behind was exposed that's when I saw the markings

she wouldn't tell me who did that to her but somehow I knew dad had something to do with it I wouldn't put him past moms death even. This was getting nowhere so I put my bowl in the sink and went up to the basketball court that will get my mind off things

I don't know how Lee took the kiss or whether it was the reason why she locked herself up but I sure can't get it out of my head.

I don't know how long I've been in there for but when I walked into the kitchen there she was, I was all sweaty and topless but I had to talk to her

Me: hey

Her: hello Mogul

I giggled I bit I'm done correcting her about that  
She was rinsing her plates

Me: mmh Lee



She turned

Me: sorry about last night

She looked at me as if I grew horns or something

Her: what happened last night?

Did she really not remember or was she just acting dumb

Me: the mmmmh...

Her: or please if it's something nasty you said just don't remind me

Oh my she can't remember? The only thing that's been invading my thoughts she doesn't recall?

Maybe it's for the best

Her: how did we get here?

Me: I drove us here

Her: thanks for taking me with the ladies were

nice to me since you just abandoned me

I nodded

She left me there feeling so stupid it wasn't even funny

I took a shower all stressed out I thought I wouldn't have to do the whole courting thing since she very much kissed me back I thought the feeling or whatever it is was mutual. I finished just in time for dinner and she was already seated on the dining table

I just joined her and kept my mouth shut, she already thinks I said something bad so she also remained quiet

She finished up

And walked to the kitchen she had on leggings and a tank top, damn that booty couldn't be missed matter of fact I think leggings were the greatest gift to men, every time when she finishes eating she rinses her dish and right

now she was facing away. you know what fuck this. I quickly grabbed her waist turned her around pulled her close to me, I kissed her again and it felt like the very first time, I relived last nights memories they can't haunt me alone

She seemed taken back a little but I kept at it. My hands went from her waist to the back of her neck gently pulling on her hard hair then her ass Good Lord this was truly art. I gently bit on her lower lip and she moaned in my mouth from the sting and kissed me back that awakened every sense on my body, I picked her up and placed her on the kitchen sink and I was now front first against her wide open legs

Me: Damn Lee.

That came out rather low my erection was throbbing against her warmth, I wrapped my arms around her waist and pulled her close to my crotch and I swear I nearly became undone

But she pushed me back, her lips were wet, swollen and pouty I leaned back down but she placed her hand on my mouth gently pushing me back

She jumped off the sink and left me more frustrated than before, where am I going wrong with this? God damn!

[05/26, 20:18] : Insert 11 **\*\*CONTINUATION\*\***

Liyakha

WHAT THE HELL JUST HAPPENED????

I was in my room feeling all hot and bothered, I just don't get why men see me as a sex thing, it was Thato then Mr L and now his son thinks it's okay to just be all over me without my consent? I don't know what it is about me that seems to attract unnecessary attention. Maybe it's this

huge ass gold hair on my head I need to cut it short maybe that'll help. I don't know what the feeling was though when he kissed me and touched me the way he did I felt a tingle between my legs something that hasn't happened before maybe because the other two never touched me like that or even kissed me. I moved up on my bed and somehow I wanted to feel that tingle again just to confirm it was real, I brought my hand to my nookie and it was a bit slimy down there I moved my hand further down and that's when the door flew open and I pulled my hand out

Him: I don't know where I'm going wrong with this Lee

He was leaning on the door looking all frustrated

Him: I never felt this way about a girl before, this is all new to me and the more you keep rejecting me the more this feeling gets intense,

I'm used to girls throwing themselves at me and I would go with the flow. Tell me what to do Lee, anything

Me: you hate me?

Him: I don't know what it is that I'm feeling but it's definitely not hate. I thought it was lust and would fade but it's not

I shrugged my shoulders and he sighed dramatically then came and knelt on my bed facing me

Him: I have this itch that I just wanna hold you, kiss you and...

He sighed

Him: damn woman you haunt my every dream.

Me: what do you call that?

Him: what?

Me: the itch? Is it sexual as if you wanna lay me?

He ran his fingers through his hair

Him: I don't think even that could make it go away

He leaned closer and held the side of my face and I just kept biting my lips, he moved closer and kissed me

and I just froze

Him: Lee please

Me: I don't wanna have sex with you

Him: we won't I just wanna feel your smooth skin on my fingers, your sweet lips on mine your breath fanning my face

Me: what changed? I mean you couldn't stand me a few weeks back

Him: I thought if I pushed you away and did what I did this right here

He put the palm of my hand on his chest

Him: would go away

I removed my hand

Me: I don't know what that is in there and I want nothing to do with it Miguel

For all I know he could be fishing his way in my pants and I can't have that I've already been sexually dominated by two men and that's as far as I'm willing to go, I mean how genuine can this be? His father bought me he might be part of the package who knows

Him: tell me what's on your mind

Me: nothing

He pulled my face close to his and pecked my lips and there comes that intense feeling between my legs and my heart beats like a drum

He kisses me ever so slowly with his hand tingling the small of my back then he pushes



me back and lays me down climbing on top of me he nudges my knees open and I feel him hard pressing on my pubic bone and I quickly push him off me

Him: what's wrong?

Me: I don't wanna do this

Him: why are you fighting this? I did say I wasn't gonna do anything but hold you that's it

Me: because!!

Him: because??

I sigh

Me: your dad

Him: what about my dad? So what if he rescued you on the streets or whatever you don't owe him anything

Me: rescued me on the streets?

Him: isn't that where he found you?

Me: no. He mmmh

Him: oh come on Lee what's the story between you and my dad

Me: he bought me

He chuckled and looked at me like I was crazy

Him: yeah right

He looked at my face

Him: are you serious?

I nodded

He jumped off the bed

Him: no fucking way!!!

He yelled

Him: tell me you're joking

I shook my head

Him: bought you?where? How? For what?

I just looked at him

Him: NO!!

I nodded

Him: has he?? Mhhh... you know touched you in that way?

Me: what else was I bought for except for being his sex toy

Him: Fuck!!!!

He walked out banging the door behind him leaving me wondering if what he said he felt was even there in the first place

I just got under the blankets and slept there was really nothing to cry about

I woke up when I heard people yelling I put on my sleepers and went out following the voices

Miguel: oh come on dad, how dirty can you be?? She's young, way too young to be fulfilling your fetishes

Mr L: you don't get to talk to me like that son

Miguel: like what? Dad get down on your high horse and recognize what you're doing is utterly disgusting and wrong?

Mr L: (warningly) Miguel!!

Miguel: is this why you killed Mom? So you can go around doing dirty old man things? Who are you?

I gasped and put my hand over my mouth but they both turned around and saw me, the rage I saw on Mr Logan's face almost released my bladder

Me: sorry

I ran back to my room. Did he just say kill? Mr L? No way he wouldn't even hurt a fly would he?

[05/26, 20:18] : Insert 12

I'm leaning on the door hoping no one comes knocking after what I heard I could be sleeping

with a serial killer or something along those lines, Miguel wouldn't make such allegations about his own father without any solid or reasonable evidence, would he?? I slide down on the door I'm terrified of moving at least there's one door and if somebody was to walk in they would have to go through me first, who am I kidding whoever comes would just push me with the door as it opens but it's worth a try.

I rub on my eyes as the son hits my face, thank goodness I'm still intact but it's quiet too quiet judging from yesterday's event, panic washes over me when my mind concludes the worst.

Me: no! Mr Logan wouldn't kill his only son would he? how would I know if I'm locked up in here

I debate with myself until I decide to open up, I slowly peak through the tiny slit and there's no one, I tiptoe to Miguel's room and knock whispering his name but nothing he might be

still asleep, my stomach growls and I pretty much have no choice but go check the kitchen, as I pass the dining area there sits Mr Logan going through the newspaper

I slowly reverse back but his stern voice startles me

Him: sit!!

Me: I was j...

He peaks at the top of the newspaper and I obliged

I take a seat at the far end of the table

Him: I would like to know why exactly you mentioned our arrangement to my son but I'm afraid that it could lead me to doing the worst thing possible as it would reveal what exactly you were up to during that time of confessions

Me: I'm...

Him: I'm not done talking

I cleared my throat

Him: why are you here?

Me: mmh because you bought me

Him: then know your place and stay away from my son are we clear

I nod

He pushes clipped papers towards me and I drag them close

Me: what's this?

Him: your contract, it's for 3 years, it clearly states that I can terminate it before the three years and set you free or prolong it or even trade you when I want, as per arrangement half of the money I bought you with will be loaded into your account immediately after the contract has been terminated, you have no say in anything and you're to oblige to everything I want, need or say am I clear?

I nod but he keeps looking at me

Me: yes

He stares back at the paper

Me: can I still go ahead with home schooling?

Him: I don't want it interfering with the reason why you are here

Me: I promise it won't

Him: good, that's it you're dismissed

I take the contract and stand

Me: are you planning on trading me

He looks at me with that dismissive face and for the first time I don't back down

Me: I deserve to know that much, so that I don't get my hopes up

Him: after what happened I might.

Then he gets back to his newspaper



I turn and go back I'm not even hungry anymore  
what I just heard totally filled me up

I knock again on Miguel's door and nothing

I head to my room and just cuddle myself,  
maybe if I didn't have such a big mouth I would  
still have no contract binding me to whatever  
this arrangement is.

It's midday and I've got nothing to do, I haven't  
eaten since and I feel like leaving this house,  
maybe I should go cut my hair

I shower and put on my long sleeve below the  
knee winter dress and ankle boots then head  
out, luckily Vusi is around I ask him to drive me  
to town and he agrees, he takes me to the salon  
and waits by the car, I try to remain oblivious to  
my surroundings but the loud high school girls  
make me wonder what could've been of my life  
if dad was around and I wasn't bound to a dick  
by a piece of paper, the carefreeness in the

sounds of their voices and the talk about boyfriends hits home, I've never had a boyfriend but I've already slept with two men, life can be really harsh for some of us, the guy that cuts my hair informs me I have to rinse off the color on my so I move to the other chair and wash, soon I'm done and look myself in the mirror and I'm pleased, he also used a bit of color on it and change is good, right?? I walk out and head to the car Vusi opens for me and we are off to the mansion we arrive just in time for dinner it was just Mr L and I at the table which made me wonder where Miguel was but I didn't ask I coz I didn't wanna get into deeper trouble so I just carried on with my food, on my way to bed I checked on Miguel once more but when I knocked the door slowly opened on it's own and the closet is wide open with nothing in it, I guess he left, but he didn't even say goodbye

. I went to bed more troubled than I was, as I

dose off my door opens and it's Mr L

Him: follow me

I know that tone so I get up and follow.

Hours later.....He has me butt naked sitting on the edge of the chair my legs tied on the sides my arms behind me and a rope around mouth and I'm trembling. he releases inside me and my body throbs with pain confirming the punishment I just got, my nipples are swollen from being pinched my thighs covered with palm prints and my throat burns from being strangled, tears run freely down my cheeks as I looked at him sitting at the edge of the bed, he looks at me then buries his face on his hands he sits there for a while before he unties me

Him: I'm sorry

He picks me up and I flinch the entire time till he lays me on the bed, I crawl into a ball with my knees close to my face and cry, for the first

time ever he lays next to me pulling a blanket over me

Him: my wife drowned herself

There's pin dropping silence and the sounds of my sniffs after that

Him: we fought like any other married couple it wasn't even that serious but she just got up one day when we were watching TV and said she was going to bed I remained behind for about 10-15 minutes watching TV and when I finally go to bed the first thing I see is my wife's lifeless body floating in the tub, it was just 10 minutes and just like that she was no more, it was only me and her in the house and yes Miguel heard us fight the night before and he concluded I killed his mom, she was my wife for goodness sake, the love of my life. my calmness in heavy storms and for him to just conclude up and leave 2 weeks later coz of some stupid basketball scholarship in the UK

was selfish, or maybe I was the selfish one but he's the only thing I have left of Angy and he can't even stand me

He stood up

Him: I wasn't always this monster

it was to himself than to me

He left me there.

[05/26, 20:19] : Insert 13

I was in my room going through the contract, it was a bit extreme and absurd if you asked me, things like no other male should touch me until the expiry of the contract if at any given time I'm to be sexually active with anyone else except him I would be "PUNISHED" it was in bold letters. Talk about control freaks. I tossed it on the side when my thoughts wandered off to Miguel and what happened in the kitchen, I

mean the way he kissed me made my nuna react in a way I've never felt before. So like any other teenager I googled porn websites don't look at me like that I know you also do hau . I settled for one and went through the content just the previews of the videos got my cookie feeling a certain way, the clenching of my muscles, rapid heart beat and the feeling of almost having a panic attack was real, I opted for one and i suddenly felt like touching myself, when my fingers reached my slippery folds my swollen nub was sensitive AF!! the feeling was so foreign and rubbing my index finger on my protruding nub made me feel like I was gonna explode from all the intensity I felt between my legs. I was spread out on the bed with my pajama shorts on my ankles and I was sure as hell about to release this intense feeling when my door flew open, I quickly pulled my sheet to cover up but he already saw me.

Him: you do know that everything you google using the WiFi I get notifications on my email about it right?

I shook my head

Him: now stop masturbating and go through these tutor profiles for home school

He threw a bunch of papers on my bed

Him: I'm going away for business I'm not sure when I'll be back but the stuff will be around if you need anything

I nodded and he walked out

Jesus couldn't he come in two minutes later coz he knew I was busy mos argh.

I got up and went to take a shower that's when I noticed I was on my period, the Dr did mention that it was one of the side effects for the implant I took care of that but I had to go to town for sanitary pads, I then checked the

profiles for tutors it was all ladies which wasn't surprising, i honestly didn't care about who it was as long as they were good at their job.

Later on when Mr Logan had already left, I asked Vusi to take me to town he waited in the car while I quickly went in I just wanted to grab what I needed and leave but On my way out of the shop I bumped into Lindo(Miguel's friend)

Him: hey, Lee right?

Me: yeah Lindo right ?

He giggled

Him: what are you doing here?

Me: I was just shopping for some essentials

Him: oh. How's everything?

Me: been good

Him: heard lover boy returned to UK

I nodded



Me: yeah

Him: after that intense kiss between you two I thought he had finally found the courage to profess his love for you

Me: I guess not

Him: let's grab something to eat, are you in a hurry?

Honestly I wasn't so keen on going back to an empty house

Me: no I'd love something to eat

He led me to some fancy restaurant and we were led to our table and well I asked him to order for me since I didn't know any of the listed food, I mean we all know how these people like complicating things instead of writing steak and salads they be writing "kxbdbfbll" so no thank you I'd rather be safe, we had our meal and he ordered a bottle of wine

Me: I'm not quite a drinker

Him: just one glass it's not that bad

I smiled and went for it, I didn't wanna seem boring, the conversation was flowing he was F\*\*\*ed up loaded but what I liked about him was that he was kasi through and through and he sure can crack me up I was in stitches all the time, he kind of reminded me of Thato before all the ish that happened, he was sweet and caring would never let anything harm me in his watch until he was the one bringing me harm, I brushed that thought off before it ruined my mood. I was laughing at a joke he said when someone cleared their throat behind me, it was Vusi, oh God I totally forgot about him

Vusi: ma'am I've been worried sick for the past three hours I thought you were just gonna grab something and we go

Me: oh my word I'm so sorry I lost track of time

I said as I stood up

Lindo: sorry bruh it's my fault

Vusi nodded I can clearly see he was pissed, I mean I also would be if I was in his shoes

Me: I'm right behind you Vusi

He nodded

Lindo: are you free this weekend? One of my friends is graduating so we're hosting an after graduation party at his crib

Me: Lindo I...

Him: Miguel did mention that you're always cooped up in that house, you're still young go out and have fun

Me: I'll think about it

Him: give me your digits then I'll call to ask whether you're going or not

I was very doubtful about this

Him: you're like a little sister to me come on Lee

Me: okay

I did give him my number and he accompanied me to the car

Him: please think about it

Me: I will thanks for lunch

Him: pleasure

I got in and a unimpressed Vusi drove us to the mansion

\*\*\*\*\*

It's as if the weekend didn't come anytime soon, I was bored out of my mind, Mr L was still not back and I had confirmed with Vusi that I was coming to the party and he was to pick me up at 18:30

I picked out my boyfriend jean with ankle boots a long sleeve off the shoulder pink crop top and a jacket

I applied eyeliner and mascara with my clean face and I thought I looked good

At 18:30 exactly Lindo was here, I took my purse that had my necessities and walked out he was driving an Audi i8 it was all black in color I got in

Him: hey momma you look good

Me: thank you

We made small talk until we arrived in this house, it was ekasi (township) and it was packed now this is what I'm used to seeing when there's a party

Him: come

He held my hand as we walked in and I couldn't avoid the stares at all they were almost piercing my soul. Lindo introduced me to his guy friends they were with their girlfriends

Guy1: will Miguel be pleased with you bonking

his girl?

Me: he's not bonking me and I am not Miguel's girl

Guy2: not yet he's not, but I'm not sure about the end of tonight

I rolled my eyes and made small talk with the girls

It wasn't long and the drinks were flowing, I was drinking ciders and they were sure getting on me my head was spinning i was carefree and didn't think much, or so I thought.

I was pressed and had to pee I informed Lindo and he accompanied me to some shady toilet, I was holding on to him that's how wasted I was, it was not the suburbs and I was cool with it.

He waited outside and I got in, I heard noise outside and something/someone crashing on the ground

Me: Lindo!

He didn't respond

Me: Lindo!

Then two guys opened the toilet door wide

Guy1: I've never had an albino before bruh

He was licking his lips and I was still sitting on the toilet seat stunned

Guy2: then this will be our first time

They literally dragged me out and Lindo was face first on the floor just outside the toilet, I kicked and screamed but they dragged me to where there was no light the music was just too loud for anyone to hear

Me: please no, don't do this if it's money you want I'll give it to you

I was in tears and snorts you name it

Guy1: actually you just gave me an idea, we

could sell your body parts at a higher price than what you would give us

Me: please I'm begging you

Guy2: strip her

Guy1 didn't hesitate he pulled off my jean and that's when they noticed I'm on my period

Guy1: ku red mfana( she's on her period)

Guy2: manje?? Ah shifta ntwana ngikuvulele indlela ( so what move aside and let me show you how it's done)

he was unbuckling his belt when a gun clicked behind him

Lindo: if you know what's good for you, you will get the hell away from her

Guy1: ah mfethu...

Lindo shot his leg and he groaned in pain

Guy2: siyaxolisa grootman ( we apologize big



guy) we were..

Lindo: now that you know it's not a toy the next bullet will be on someone's head

He literally dragged his friend with him and Lindo came towards me

Him: you okay

I was so embarrassed butt first on the grass, my head was spinning I threw up on the ground next to me and felt even worse

Him: I'm sorry I bought you here you know sometimes we forget just how savage people can be

He wiped my mouth with his t-shirt and started fixing me up, he pulled my underwear up followed by my jean he didn't even care that I had a full pad on

Him: let's get going

He held my hand and led me to the car

Him: are you okay? Did they do anything to you?

I shook my head

Him: I'm sorry

I just started crying

Me: it's okay you know, I'm used to people doing that

Him: what's that suppose to mean?

Me: nothing just that my brother did the same and at 16 I sold myself to an old dirty white man, see? It's nothing to worry about.

suddenly my eyelids got heavy on me I couldn't keep my eyes open and I just wanted to sleep it was lights out.

[05/26, 20:19] : Insert 14

Logan

I arrived here at midnight and went up to Liya's room but she wasn't there, I woke Vusi up this couldn't wait and he said something about Miguel's friend picking her up. I called her phone and no answer I literally went crazy, for one I've paid millions for her to be here when I need her to be, I've lost a huge deal with a big client and the only thing that I've discovered and seems to calm me down is hardcore sex with Liya. I get to release all my frustrations I'm not proud of it but it helps, it has also helped with dealing with the mourning of my wife, we all deal with loss differently and since I bought Liya I've been making progress, over the years I've tried to drown the sorrows with alcohol but that only suppressed it for that moment and the following day I'm back to square one, with Liya it's different I'm dealing with it, her innocence is what really turns me on might not be the best way but I've tried shrinks and most professional help but nothing worked but since Liya I've even

went to see my wife, after 5 years I've finally made peace with the fact that she's gone. Yes Liya wasn't the best option but she's helping me get there. I sometimes feel disgusted by myself coz my wife would never approve of this but it's working and that's all that matters. She's almost like a drug that I need a fix of, and her not being here is driving me crazy, no one knows where she is, the contract clearly stated that she should be here whenever I need her and right now she's not and I'm forced to punish her

\*\*\*\*\*

Liyakha

I wake up and I'm facing up the ceiling staring at cloud like art drawn on it, I don't know whether I'm still drunk or what but they look like they are moving. The sun shines through the

window making my eyes sting. I peak under the covers and I'm in my underwear and the crop top. I pull up the covers over my head, these surrounding walls might be unfamiliar but I know I left the party yesterday with Lindo and by the feeling between my legs I know he didn't touch me inappropriately, so I stay in bed for a while, until I doze off again and this time I'm woken up by the blast of music I have no choice but to get up and besides I need to take care of my hygiene. I do just that and walk downstairs and he is doing yoga I wanna laugh coz I thought that was mostly for women and he's quite a big guy for yoga. I cleared my throat and he turns around

Him: hey slept ok

Me: like a baby thank you

Him: come I've made breakfast

It's muesli and yoghurt

We sit on the kitchen stools and he keeps stealing glances at me

Me: what?

Him: about what you said last night on our way here...

I shrug my shoulders

Me: it is what it is

He pushes his bowl away in anger

Him: are you even listening to yourself?? It is what it is? Just like that as if its the most normal thing ever?

Me: oh wow really? I didn't tell you that so you can judge me

Him: I'm not judging you I'm just concerned like any other next person would be

Me: don't be I'm fine

Him: fuck this!

He pushes the bowl to the floor

Me: what the hell?

Him: really?? You gonna ask me that?

Me: you don't know the kind of life I've been exposed to Lindo I wasn't born with a silver spoon in my mouth

Him: and I guess I was?? You know nothing about me

Me: as much as you don't know half the shit I've been through!

Him: I don't wanna fight with you about this I wanna help

Me: help? How exactly are you planning on helping me huh? Moving in with you so you can also use me? Nah I don't think so

Him: What the hell? I'm not that dirty come on I just wanna help

Me: how Lindo???

Him: I don't know maybe get the police involved and get you a safe place to stay

Me: I wasn't forced to sell myself, it was a conscious choice that I made for myself, it might've not been the best choice but nonetheless it was mine, for once I made the decision to be someone else's sex toy no one made it for me

Him: ah screw that, you're only 16 years old!

Me: 17!!

Him: same difference!! Gosh are you kidding me! Legally you're still a minor and whatever he's doing to you is a crime

Me: he doesn't know and doesn't have to, like I said it was my choice

He bangs the counter with his fist

Him: fuck this!!

Me: no one else should know about this



He gives me a death stare

Me: please, it's my choice!

Him: what do you know about choices when your brain isn't even fully developed yet

Me: and yours is?

He gets up and storms out of the room

Great that went well

I get up and go take a shower with just soap coz some people know nothing about hospitality, I dry up with the towels I found there and wear the very same clothes. Then go searching for him I need to get back to the mansion, I knock and walk in

Me: could you please take me back

He stares at me for a while

Him: sure

He wears his slides and lead us outside

We get in his Mini Cooper and he drives in total silence

Me: Lindo please, no one should know about this, I told you because I trusted you

Him: you didn't trust me you where just drunk

Me: I'm okay with it

Him: what did you mean when you said your brother did the same

Me: it's different, with Mr Logan I consented to it my brother took my virginity in the name of food I didn't have a say in it coz i needed to eat, get clothed and so on

Him: do you understand that it's wrong though? What he does to you is wrong. The marks on your body are not meant to be there

Me: so you're body shaming me now?

Him: believe me this comes from a good place, you're a beautiful young girl that needs to be at

school studying or something not this

Me: he's taking me to school

He sighs

Him: there's no getting through to you, but I just want you to know that I mean well, if you need advice or a shoulder to cry on or whatever and anything give me a call

I nod

Him: I'm not gonna take advantage of you i promise

Me: okay

He drops me off at the gate and drives off

When I walk in I see Mr Ls car on the driveway and I instantly panic coz for one he's gonna think I slept with someone. He's in the lounge holding a glass of whiskey in hand

Me: good morning Mr Logan

Him: what's so good about it?

Me: what?

Him: the damn morning what's so good about it?

Me: me nothing I suppose

Him: didn't the contract state that you should be available anytime I need you

Me: it did, but...

I'm shaking out of my jeans

Him: where did you go last night?

Me: Lindo took me out to a party, I only went because you weren't around and I was...

Him: so when I'm not around you do as you please?

Me: no. I....

Him: naughty room

I look at him puzzled

Him: now!!

I run up the stairs to the “naughty room”  
seconds later he walks in

Him: strip

I do as told

He grabs the bottle of lubricant and I’m  
instructed to go on all fours at the edge of the  
bed

Me: I swear Mr Logan I didn’t sleep with anyone

He ignores me and goes to my other opening  
and I scream in agony

I kept pleading my case but it fell on deaf ears

He wipes himself clean

Him: why is it so hard for you to just follow the  
rules, I wouldn’t have to do this you know

He leaves me shaking in pain, it actually felt  
worse than the first time he did it. I cuddled my

knees and cried.

[05/26, 20:19] : Insert 15

6 months later

It's safe to say I've been a good girl, I've "followed the rules" and I haven't been punished since the last time. It's the festive season and I just came from shopping for my Christmas clothes , Lindo has been a blessing in disguise honestly, He has been here for me like he promised. He calls now and again to check on me and I also call when I need someone to talk to. It's 2 days before Christmas and the lounge has a huge Christmas tree fully decorated with presents. I'm amused by all this sometimes I would go sit next to it and just adore it I've never seen one up close fully done. Luckily Mr L managed to pull some strings and I

was registered at some school for grade 11 home schooling, I was registered mid year and completed my grade 11. I don't know how he did it but I was grateful, my tutor was Miss Ngema she was in her late 30s, I was doing well if I should say so myself I was to do my matric the following year, besides his other side he really did pull through for me on this one. I was alone in the house Mr Logan was to arrive anytime now, the stuff had already left earlier today for Christmas holidays, they had cooked and frozen meals enough for a week, I was just sitting by the Christmas tree when I heard the door open, it's not long when Miguel walked in with a heavily pregnant white woman

I remained rooted on the spot

Miguel: is dad around

Still a jerk ass I see

I shook my head

Woman: don't be so rude baby she might be a maid but she's still human

Really?? A maid?

Miguel: I'll get the bags in the car

Woman: never mind him hi I'm Tracey

Me: Liyakha

Her: nice to meet you

Me: you too

She made herself comfortable on the couch

Her: is there anything to eat here I'm starving

She said rubbing on her tummy

Me: help yourself there's food in the fridge

I stood up and left. I don't know why I was feeling like that, I felt betrayed or cheated on I can't really tell but I was sad my heart was aching for some reason.

I decided to install social networks on my



phone when a knock came through it was Miguel

Him: did my dad say when he'll be back?

I shook my head

Him: come on Lee don't be like that

I just stared right in his eyes

Him: what do you want me to do, apologize?

me: nothing, I want you to do nothing, stop nagging me and go back to your girlfriend

Him: it's not like that

Me: then how is it? Huh?

I was yelling and getting really angry don't ask me why coz I also don't know but for some reason I was pissed off tears clouded my eyes

Him: I'm sorry okay, I didn't mean for it to happen

Me: remind me why you're explaining yourself

again?

He huffed

Him: I just felt like I had to explain after what happened between us the last time I was here, and I want you to know that I meant every word I said

Me: fine, now that you're done leave my room your baby mama is hungry

Him: Lee

Me: it's Liyakha, LI..YA..KHA got it?

Him: I'm sorry

Me: you're just like your father always apologizing, I don't wanna hear it okay I don't

I was now crying, I just didn't understand why these people keep on hurting me like this well I also don't understand what it is that I feel right now

He sighed and walked out

I called Lindo

Him: Hey how are you?

Me: I'm fine

I sniffed

Him: are you crying?

Me: no

Okay now I was really crying

Him: hey come on Lee you know I'm out of the country don't do this, tell me what's wrong?

Me: Miguel is back

Him: oh

Me: oh my Gosh so you knew

Him: it wasn't my place to say anything and I thought you said you weren't his girl?

Me: it doesn't matter what I said, all I know now is that he brought this pregnant blonde over and I don't like it, i feel otherwise about it

Him: sorry snow flake you'll be alright

I giggled

Me: you know I hate that name

Him: it's better than Snow White

We both laughed

Me: thank you for listening Lindo

Him: anytime now let me get back to practice

Me: when are you coming back

Him: miss me already

Me: just asking

Him: in two days

Me: ok buy me something nice

Him: sure will see you soon

I hung up

Freshened my face and went downstairs

Mr Logan was back they were all sitting around

the table I wonder who dished up coz the pregnant lady was exactly that. PREGNANT .

I warmed up my food and joined them

They were giggling and chatting up a storm, Mr Logan only commented here and there and I was just focusing on my plate

Mr L: so that's how you proposed?

He proposed? I thought he said he didn't mean for it to happen?

Miguel cleared his throat and shifted uncomfortably on his chair

Tracey: it was the most romantic thing ever

Mr L nodded

I stood up

Mr L: you're not done eating

Me: I don't feel so good I'll take my food to my room I'll eat when I wake up

He nodded

Miguel couldn't even look at me, and honestly I didn't know why I felt this way because it's not like we were dating or something he kissed me and that was it, whatever he said after that was just lies to get in my pants

I got in my room got under the covers and slept.

\*\*\*\*\*

Christmas Day

I was in my room the whole morning didn't feel like going downstairs to the love birds, Tracey was quite touchy and for some reason Miguel was forever uncomfortable I don't know whether it was my presence so I just decided to stay in my room for a while but I couldn't anymore coz I was hungry, so I wore my onesie and went searching for something to eat

When I entered the kitchen Tracey was sitting on the high stool with her phone in hand no sign of Miguel or Mr L

Me: morning

Her: hey, it's afternoon darling

I just nodded

Her: oh gosh

He banged the counter in frustration

Me: calm down, whatever it is I'm sure it's not worth stressing the baby over

Her: do yo know any of Miguel's friends?

Me: no, why?

Her: he left last night and I haven't heard from him since

Me: did he say where he was going

She shook her head

Her: he just left in a hurry saying he'll be back

soon

I shrugged my shoulders and left a frustrated Tracey.

Well Christmas was just boring It made me miss home a bit, we used to have braais while Mom was still alive, she would cook up a storm and we would spend the whole night singing Xhosa songs with neighbors dancing along it was fun, until Mom passed away and my whole life as I knew it turned upside down, i spent the whole day in my room stuffing myself with sweet things and reminiscing about a whole lot of the past . It was past midnight and I couldn't sleep sugar rush wouldn't allow me, I switched my side lamp off with hopes of the darkness bringing sleep soon but nothing, until a stumbling someone clearly drunk opened my door

I immediately jumped out of bed



Him: Lee

Me: Miguel?? What are you doing here? Tracey was worried sick about you.

I turned on the lights

He was absolutely wasted, couldn't even stand up straight, he stumbled towards me and pinned me against the closet

Him: I missed you

I tried to push him away but it was in vein

Me: please get away from me!

Him: don't you think I've tried to get away from you

He unexpectedly scooped me up and lightly threw me on the bed and got on top of me

Me: stop or I swear I'll scream

Him: be my guest and see if I care

Me: Miguel don't do this

He just went for my lips and kissed the life out of me, the way he was sucking on my lips was sure to leave them swollen

Him: I'm not gonna sleep with you so relax

He whispered against my lips and stared into my eyes

His hands went from my hips to squeezing my butt, his teeth slightly grazed my erect nipples poking through the vest, the tingling sensation was back and this time more intense It felt really wet and slippery between my legs

Me: Miguel you need to stop

He sighed and buried his head on the crook of my neck then moved to the side turned me around and cuddled me from behind

Me: you need to go to Trac...

Him: shhhhh I just wanna sleep okay

Me: that is not a good idea, I don't wanna....

He snored

Me: Miguel!

He snores louder

I lightly tapped him but nothing, there was no way I could move him even if I tried so I locked the door turned off the lights put a huge blanket between us and slept.

[05/26, 20:19] : Insert 16

I feel someone's breath fanning my face it smells horrible, you know the "after beer night breath", I cover my nose and open my eyes, Miguel is staring at me

Me: eww get away

Him: morning to you to

Me: what time is it? you need to get going

Him: ouch that hurts, I feel like a one night

stand

He holds his chest dramatically

Me: come on Miguel you're gonna get me into trouble

Him: relax it's 05:30

Me: please leave

Him: who did you take after with that birth mark?

I pull the blanket to cover up

Me: no one

Him: I've never seen one so big and so beautiful  
it compliments you

Me: just stop okay

Him: just a compliment geez

He stares into my eyes for what feels like  
forever

Him: you're very beautiful Lee

Me: thanks

He sighs

Him: for the record I still like you a lot

Me: Tracey..

Him: don't tell me about her, yes it happened  
but I didn't mean for it to

Me: well what do you expect when you have  
unprotected sex

I roll my eyes

Him: that's the thing I've always used protection  
it was just this one time when the condom  
burst and I was in the zone I just carried on, I  
gave her money for emergency contraceptives  
and she said she forgot to take them

Me: is it yours?

Him: 99.9% I've done the paternity test already

I nod

Him: what's wrong?

Me: nothing I guess I was kinda hoping it wasn't

Him: really?

Me: but it is yours, now get going

He gets up and he's only in his boxers, remind me again when did he take his clothes off?? and I can't miss what I'm seeing right now

Him: like what you see??

Me: it's too big I can't say I like what I see but I also can't miss it, it's right in my face

Him: wanna see?

He pulls the elastic waist band of his boxers

Me: eww Miguel

I cover my eyes

He laughed

Him: relax, gosh I could never get used to your innocence

He continues to laugh

Him: it doesn't bite you know

Well from my experience it definitely bites

I guess he sees the change in my face

Him: sorry that was a bit insensitive

I nod

Him: I'm out

He picks up his clothes and leaves only in his boxers, I pray nobody sees him

I cover my head and go back to sleep

I woke up when I heard noise from Miguel's room it's hard to miss coz it's right next to mine

Tracey is screaming her lungs out saying something about Miguel screwing the maid, I wonder which maid coz they all went home for holidays, I get up tie my gown and go knock

Miguel opens

Him: Lee

Me: what's going on, do you guys know what time it is

Tracey: did you know what time it was when you were screwing my fiancé

Me: whoa, what??

Her: I heard you complimenting how huge a dick he has

Miguel pulled me in and closed the door

Tracey is a crying mess

Me: no no no, Tracey it's not like that he...

Miguel: let her believe what she wants Lee she's entitled to her own opinion & beliefs

Me: you're not making this any better Miguel

Tracey: so now you don't care anymore because I'm fat, she's the next new toy huh

Miguel: Tracey I didn't lie to you never did, from



the time we were fuck buddies I was always honest with you, why would I lie now? I told you we just slept, she even had this huge ass comforter between us couldn't even cuddle, I took off my clothes coz I felt hot and not used to sleeping in clothes so believe what you want I'm done explaining myself

Tracey: we need to have a meeting with your father...

Me: what? No! Nothing happened between Miguel and I, he was drunk and lost, he thought it was his room since they're next to each other by the time I finished explaining to him he was in the wrong room he had passed out. He would never cheat on you especially not with me, he's way out of my league, I'm not the type he dates you are, besides he kept mumbling your name even in his drunk state he loves you

To say Miguel was stunned would be an understatement

Both of them: what??

Tracey: he did?

Me: yeah

Talk about a dumb Blondie

Miguel: yeah I probably did

Tracey: oh I'm so sorry babe, you know these hormones are playing tricks on me, my emotions are all over the place

He hugged Miguel who gave me the " what the fuck face" and I shrugged my shoulders

Me: I should have dragged him here I'm sorry Tracey, but Mr Logan can't know about this I need this job

Her: it's water under the bridge hun I totally understand

Me: thank you

When I exit Mr Logan was right at the door

Him: get dressed we are going shopping

I nodded

Could it be that he didn't hear anything? If he did why would he take me shopping?

He walked away

I got in my room took a 5 minutes shower lotions and got dressed in my short floral jumpsuit with vans sneakers, did my natural look makeup and was done, Mr L was already in the car

Me: where are we going?

He remained quiet

He drove in silence and we got to the mall, he led me to a lingerie store, more like adult shop, you could tell it's expensive just by the look of it and the number of people here, there was everything sexual, from sex toys to sex wear

Him: we're here for the sexiest you have in the

store and I'd like a private fitting area for me and the lady

He said to the store assistant

Right this way sir, said the assistant

She led us to a secluded area there was a long couch and a fitting room with a curtain, there were mirrors all round covering the booth

Her: let's go shopping ma'am

Well I don't know why she said that coz she pretty much picked out everything then led me to the fitting area, Mr Logan was sitting on the couch typing something on his phone

I walked in and closed the curtains

As I was busy putting on the barely there two piece lingerie I heard voices on the other side of the curtains at first I thought it was just his business associates maybe saying hello, but the conversation didn't sound like people

passing by. I remained in the fitting booth  
waiting for the voices to go away

Mr L: Liya

Me: yes

Him: aren't you done yet?

Me: mmmh, I'm done

Him: come out let's see

Let's??? Haibo

Me: are you alone?

Him: come on we don't have all day

When I take a peak, there's Sizwe( the pervert  
who wants to trade with Mr L) then there's 3  
other gentlemen I don't recognize

The lingerie is barely covering my important bits,  
my nipples are just patched with some sticky  
dangling things the underwear is a see through  
thong

I grab the silk gown to cover my back but it hardly covers half of my ass

I walk out and all eyes on me, the master of perverts licks his bottom lip

Sizwe: fuck!! Logan I would give you a quarter of a million just for one night with her, just one night man

Mr Logan sips on his drink

Mr L: take off that gown

I drop it off my shoulders

Sizwe: turn around

I look at Mr L and he just takes another sip

I take a deep breath and turn

Guy1: oh fuck that's one juicy ass

These old men are qualified perverts

Mr L: go change I've seen enough

The second one is worse than the first, it's a

one piece that looks like a swim suit only difference is it's all strings my back is more covered than my front because of the zipper, the string like threads run across my nipples and one thread runs from my front to my back covering only my clit, my huge ass is out there. I can't do this

Sizwe: we're waiting Vanilla

This is not happening

I slowly walk out with my head down

Guy2: damn I just had an instant boner

It's the same thing again I turn around and they keep the nasty comments coming the mirrors are not helping at all

Guy3: I need a picture of this ass

Mr L: no pictures

Sizwe: oh come on Logan

Mr L: I said no pictures man and that's final

Sizwe gets up and approaches me

Mr L: no touching she's still mine

Sizwe: oh come on we'll trade soon let me test drive

Mr L: until then she's still mine and I still call the shots

Sizwe: shit! This is torture

He grabs his crotch and sits back down, Gosh this is disgusting

Mr L: change

I head back and as I anticipated it's much more revealing than the last, this one I don't even think it qualifies being called lingerie it's nothing, and it covers absolutely nothing, it's only a barely there leather skirt that covers the upper part of my ass and a leather top that covers half of my boobs, my everything is hanging out, I'm basically naked I can see my nookie right there,



I don't care what Mr Logan says I'm not walking out

Mr L: Liya

I remain quiet

Him: I have an important meeting in the next hour and I have to drive back and freshen up

I still shut my mouth

Him: don't make me drag you out of there

I hear foot steps approach

Me: remember you said I should tell you if I feel uncomfortable, right now I feel extremely uncomfortable, I feel violated.

He stops on his tracks

Sizwe: this should be good

Mr L: Liya!!

His voice is stern

Me: please Mr Logan I really can't come out in

this, especially with them here, I can't !

My voice breaks

Him: gentlemen the show is over

Sizwe: actually it has just begun

Mr L: you may be excused

Sizwe: you're....

Mr L: Sizwe this is not the time

Sizwe: as you wish man, enjoy it Vanilla coz  
once you're mine the little show you just pulled  
wont work on me

I hear them walking out

MrL: get dressed we're leaving

He leaves

I get back to my clothes I find him waiting at the  
door and we go to the car

We both get in

He starts the car

Him: stay away from my son.

His voice is low but possesses so much authority

I nod

Him: what?

Me: yes Mr Logan

He drives off

[05/26, 20:20] : Insert 17

9 months later

It's another year of my unappetizing life, I'm busy with my trial exams well the 12th grade isn't that hard. Miguel has a 6 months old baby boy he's too adorable he has Miguels eyes and Lips they moved back to the UK after Tracey

gave birth, it's been okay nothing to brag about except for , I've finally turned 18!

Well Mr L was just himself and I've been a good girl, nothing ever happened between Miguel and I and I made sure of it, I can't keep showing my bits for those perverts so I have been behaving well. Mr Logan was away like always, that's all he ever does this year, travel. I hardly see him but when I do he sure leaves a mark. Lindo asked to meet up with me and I agreed haven't seen him in a while. I freshened up and put on my jean shorts with a white crop top and oversized camouflage shirt unbuttoned at the front and my all black nike sneaker.

I didn't wanna bother Vusi so I requested an Uber, I informed Antonio the chef that I'm going shopping in case Mr L arrived. My Uber picked me up and I was off to Lindos place

I knocked once and walked in, he was in the kitchen with nothing but an apron with boxers

Me: hey

He turned around with a knife in his hand

Me: geez relax, I did knock

Him: hey Snow Flake

He put the knife on the counter and gave me a hug

Me: you need to stop with that name

Him: I didn't know you would arrive early I would've been properly dressed, let me dress up, make yourself comfortable

He ran to his room I took off the jacket and hung it on the stool then

checked what he was making and there were lamb chops in the oven, Greek salad, mash potatoes and mushroom soup, he sure can cook, i pour myself an Apple juice and sit on the kitchen stool guarding the pots. I remember he told me about his love for cooking but his

parents were against it telling him there were better careers so he went for BA which he didn't complete coz he discovered his love for sports which worked quite well for him. He walks downstairs looking appropriate

Him: we need snacks and drinks, I'll be right back

Me: you're not leaving me alone in this house

Him: turn off the stove and let's go then

He drives to the mall. We first go to the liquor store and get our drinks then Woolworths for snacks, we were on the snacks isle when one of the three guys I saw at the lingerie store approached, he was with some girl, probably my age or a few years older but definitely young. I turned around and walked the other way

Lindo: haibo did you see a ghost or something?

Me: no just someone I didn't wanna see

Speak of the devil he yelled

Man: Vanilla!

Oh really? That's my name now?

Lindo: is that him?

Me: let's go okay, we got everything we need anyway

I hurried to the pay point and Lindo catch up

Him: who was that?

Me: no one important

As if the devil ever gives up he queues behind us with the girl

Man: I knew that was you, how are you doing sweet thing

I keep my mouth shut

Man: come on you can do better than that

He runs his fingers on my bare arm and I move away

Lindo: fuck off man, she doesn't wanna talk to you

Man: shut up boy I'm not talking to you

Lindo moves close to him he was hovering over him coz his tall

Me: leave it Lindo it's our turn to pay

He didn't

I pulled his arm

He looked at me than payed

We walked out and he was walking fast I had to catch up

We got to the car and he opened we both got in

Me: why are you angry at me?

Him: who was that?

Me: one of Mr Logan's friends

Him: how does he know you?



Me: it's a long story

Him: I have time

Me: Lindo please drop it okay

He started the car and we left

When we got to his place he had calm down but  
I could tell he wasn't gonna drop this

He got back to cooking while I snacked

He dished up for us and we ate

Me: damn you're good at this

Him: I try

Me: yeah right

We finish eating and he takes his beer from the  
fridge and hands me my cider

We watch TV, its not long before starts raining  
outside and it gets a bit cold

Him: I'll get a fleece and turn on the fireplace

He does just that and we continue watching TV  
His on his 5th beer and I'm still on my second  
cider

We share the fleece and I'm totally comfortable  
with it, I don't know what it is about Lindo that  
makes me feel safe, I'm carefree around him,  
he's like a brother to me, I don't see him as a  
threat coz he doesn't carry himself like one, he  
genuinely cares about me and that's more than  
enough

Me: Mr Logan arranged a lingerie fitting and  
that man was there

I feel him tense next to me

Me: it was so embarrassing and degrading, I  
was practically naked in front of them

Him: when was this?

Me: several months back

Him: and you didn't tell me?

Me: it didn't come up and besides it was to embarrassing to repeat

Him: did they do anything to you

Me: no

Him: touch you?

Me: no

Him: this needs to stop Liyakha

Me: it's almost the end of my contract anyway

Him: what about the trading thing

Me: I think he'll sell me to his other friend

Him: this will never end will it?

I shrugged my shoulders

Him: what if you fell pregnant?

Me: what?

Him: what if you were to fall pregnant? Then they can't trade you

Me: I don't want a baby Lindo, that idea is just absurd, besides he put me on contraceptive

Him: what kind?

Me: the implant

Him: we can have it removed

Me: Lindo stop okay, that's not gonna happened you're drunk and not thinking straight

Him: listen snow flake, I can arrange to have it removed and fertility pills prescribed, then you'll be pregnant before you even know it, once you're pregnant you put it back in it won't harm the baby, I'll help you take care of the baby afterwards

I chuckled but the look in his face was too serious

Me: what??? You can't be serious Lindo

Him: it's better than being traded around to sex freaks

Me: the baby will be a constant reminder of him  
how's that of any help

Him: it's better than this

I sighed

Me: maybe if you were to father it

He looked at me like I'm crazy

Him: what?

Me: I'll have the implanon removed get on  
fertility pills and then you have sex with me

He stood up

Him: no! I mean, that's crazy I don't even look at  
you like that

Me: it's just gonna be a couple of times when  
Mr Logan is away

Him: Jesus snow flake that's insane

me: please Lindo, it could be my only way out

Him: then how am I any different from them?? I

can't do that to you? Not like that, I can't!

Me: why not? Am I too dirty for you

Him: what? Geez are you listening to yourself?

Me: sexually dirty maybe

Him: are you for real? Lee I can't do that to you, coz for one I'll be no different to them, and my conscious won't let me I don't think il even get a boner that's how much troubled my thoughts Will be, maybe if I didn't know you like I do now I would

Me: am I not attractive enough

Him: now that's emotional blackmail and you know it

He huffed

Him: snow Flake you're gorgeous, you're beautiful you're an amazing person, the little time I've spent with you have taught me so much about you, you deserve greatness,

uncensored love and what you're asking me to do is way too much

Me: then stop with the stupid suggestions

He sighed and sat next to me

Him: it was a stupid idea huh

Me: yes

We both giggle

Him: we'll have to figure something out

I nodded

Me: but what?

He shrugged

Me: thank you

Him: for what?

Him: being you

I hugged him

I wish there were more people like him in this

world.

[05/26, 20:20] : Insert 18

1 month later

I was fast asleep when I felt something heavy dropping by my feet on the bed

Him: who sent you?

Me: what?

I was still sleepy AF

Him: don't you fucking play games with me little girl

I rubbed on my heavy eyes

Me: Mr Logan

He roughly grabbed my wrist and dropped me on the floor, that's when I knew this was serious I was spooked he was never this physical with me



Me: whatever it is I did I'm sorry

He pulled a gun from his back and cocked it

I pulled the sheet on the bed and covered my head I wasn't about to witness whatever it is he was about to do

Him: how old are you

Me: I'm...

Him: I want you to think long and hard about what you're about to say

I started shaking

Me: 18

I whispered

Him: you better be loud coz you might never get another chance to be after this

Me: I'm 18

My head was still covered

Him: how long have you been 18

Me: I turned a few months ago

Him: how old were you when I bought you

Me: 16?

Him: shit!! Fuck! Fuck! Fuck!!

He banged on something

Him: who are you working with?

Me: huh?

He roughly pulls away the sheet and squats in front of me with the gun in his hands

Him: don't you fuckin act dumb

Me: Mr Logan I swear

He placed the gun on the side of my face

Him: you better start talking

Me: I swear on my life I'm not working with anyone I don't even know what this is about

He dragged the file on my bed and threw it on

my face

There was a copy of my birth certificate, my parents documents even the file my mom used when she was pregnant with me, there were pictures of me at the lingerie store only showing Mr Logan's face, pictures of the marks on my back zoomed in, there was my brothers documents, there were pictures of us, him driving, each and every picture had a quote in it, ranging from "the nasty behind Logan"-  
"business man of the year into young girls"  
"The mighty Logan a sex freak"

This was confusing

Me: where did you get this

Tears filled my eyes

He was furious, actually that's an understatement I've never seen him like this, pacing around my room

Him: you were 16 years old when I fucked you!

Do you know what that entails? Do you have the slightest bit of idea what that could do to my image? What could happen to me in prison? Do you have any idea what could happen if this reaches the media?

Me: I wouldn't risk putting myself out there like this, you have to believe me Mr Logan I had nothing to do with this I...

He knocked my head hard with the base of the gun, I felt my skull almost crack, my ears started buzzing I cried out loud

Me: I sold myself to get away from my brother! He used me for sex, he took my virginity. At least with you it was my choice, maybe not the wisest decision but I consented to this arrangement, so Mr Logan you can kill me if you want maybe you'll be doing me a favor taking me out of this miserable life

Him: I promise you if this leads back to you

somehow you're dead, if whoever sent these leaks them to the media you're dead. Right Now I want you out of my house, you have exactly one minute

he looked at his watch and left me there confused AF

I had no bag to pack my things in so I pulled the sheet on the bed and dropped what I thought was important tied up the sheet took my phone and ran out of there it was dark outside didn't even know what time it was

The gate was opened I ran out, the first person that crossed my mind was Lindo he was out of the country but I had no one else to call, when I checked the time it was a few minutes after 2am so I dialed him

Him: Snow Flake

I sniffed

Him: who am I killing?

Me: I've got nowhere to go Lindo

Him: hey Lee, are you okay? What's going on??

Me: Mr Logan, he, he found out Lindo, someone sent him my documents and some pictures, he threw me out

Him: calm down, do you have cash on you

Me: no

Him: get an Uber to my place, the key is in the flower pot wanext to the door there's cash in one of the sugar cubes I'm flying out in the next available flight

I sniffed

Me: thank you

Him: be safe I'll be there soon

I hung up

I requested an Uber and did as Lindo said

I paid the Uber and locked myself in

I didn't even realize I was bleeding on my forehead and the blood had dried up

I took a shower and changed my clothes, I had a scar on my forehead but it wasn't scary or huge but the bump was, I couldn't even sleep I thought Mr Logan was coming for me and would somehow track me here. I dialed Lindo again and his phone sent me straight to voicemail. I sat in front of the TV and waited till the sun came out. I got up and made myself something to eat, there wasn't a lot of food so I opted for bread and eggs with Apple Juice. I was just trying to think who would do that? It could be Sizwe or maybe one of his business associates he's a rich man a lot of people are out to get him.

I heard the door open and I jumped it was Lindo

Him: hey it's just me

I literally ran and jumped on him

Me: he's gonna kill me Lindo, you should've seen his face

Him: did he do this to you?

He moved me from him

Me: who would do that? Imagine if those pictures reached the media

Him: they won't

Me: don't be so sure

Him: I am

I looked at him puzzled

Him: they won't okay?

Me: Lindo

That was a whisper

Him: what?

Me: don't tell me it's you

He walked towards the couch



Me: oh my God Lindo

Him: i had to think of something

Me: what if he shot me

Him: he wasn't gonna do that he knows what's at risk

Me: you put my life at risk

Him: are you kidding me I risked mine, do you know what shit I had to do to put that file together?

I sighed and sat next to him

Him: I'm sorry

I sighed

Me: don't apologize, I know it came from a good place

He nodded

Him: are you okay?

Me: now that you're here I am and I'm sleepy

Him: go to bed I'll go buy some groceries

Me: you can't leave me alone at least wait until I'm asleep

Him: okay

I lay my head on his shoulder

Him: it's gonna be okay

Me: I know

him: when are your exams?

Me: In 3 weeks

He nodded

I was really sleepy

I felt him lift me up and he tucked me in bed

Me: I'm not asleep you know

Him: I'm not leaving yet I'll wait till you're asleep

He sat at the edge of the bed and typed something on his phone and soon enough sleep

took over.

[05/26, 20:20] : Insert 19

It's been a week and couple of days since I left Mr Logan's house and it's safe to say I'm sleeping a lot better, I'm not so scared that he'll come for me anymore I mean man like Mr Logan don't waste time so if he wanted me dead he would've tracked me here and did it himself, Lindo has been good to me, I remember the first days I would knock at his door coz I couldn't sleep and he would tell me to get a blanket and face the other way and nothing funny ever happened he would sleep the whole night, not try to cuddle or whatever, he's been too good sometimes I wonder what he's gonna want in return but so far he hasn't looked at me funny or like he wants to sink balls deep inside me, he's forever smiling or yelling at the sports channel or stuffing his face with food,

he says he loves my cooking coz it's different from how he cooks, we take turns in cooking but when he's got practice I do all the cooking and honestly I don't mind it it's the least I could do, I start my final exams in a few days and I've been studying okay but I left a lot of my stuff including school stuff at Mr Logan's and even though Lindo said I should let it be I feel like we shouldn't waste money on things that I could just request an Uber and fetch they're still brand new some I haven't even put on or used, I was in the kitchen making breakfast Lindo walked down looking all fresh

Me: hey where to so early?

Him: to see my Lady

Me: finally! I thought you were gay

He held his chest dramatically

Him: wow that just bruised my ego

We both laughed

I dished up for both of us and we sat by the counter and ate

Me: aren't you afraid?

Him: of what?

Me: that Mr Logan might find out you're the one that sent those things

Him: he won't, but if he does I'll be waiting

Me: Lindo that man can hurt you

Him: and I'll hurt him back

I sighed

Him: I'm not sure when I'll be back but..

Me: should I wait up?

I know I sound like a nagging wife but I was still not a hundred percent comfortable with sleeping alone it got better knowing he's in the other room, he looked at me for a while

Him: look I'll bring her over

Me: okay

I released the breath I didn't know I was holding

He kissed my forehead and left

He does that a lot but not in a sexual way, more like a younger sibling kind of way it makes me feel cute and assured, he's 25 years old and an older brother I always wished for. As soon as he left I tidied up and changed into comfortable clothes requested an Uber to Mr Logan's mansion I know it's risky but I can't put that kind of burden on Lindo. I got there and the security guard let me in it wasn't even a hassle I think it's because he knew me, the moment I was in I ran to the room I used and luckily everything was packed in two plastic bags, there was no sign of Mr Logan, as I headed for the door I heard sounds coming from the third floor my mind told me to keep going but my body shifted towards where the sounds were coming from, I dropped the plastics by the stairs and kept

going, it sounded like a drunk man singing, I climbed up and it was still the same, with the gallery look but the door that was locked the last time I came up here was opened and that's where the singing was coming from, curiosity got the better of me I found my feet carrying me to the open door. Mr Logan's feet were by the door I slowly took a peak and there he was, laying on his back with a bottle of whiskey in his hand and when I looked up that's one sight I'll never forget, there was a white woman, the one in every picture in this house, she was by the corner of this small room at the center of a rectangular glass securing her in place, she looked dead and alive at the same time her cheeks were full, she looked like she would open her mouth and talk but at the same time remain as she is, is this some type of voodoo? I literally froze and looked at this woman in front of me, Mr Logan was way out of it to care that I was standing by the door. This whole time I was

sleeping in a house with a corpse right above my head. Surprisingly I wasn't afraid but curious.

Mr L: I can't let her go

I looked at him and he was now sitting up

Him: she left me!

Me: Mr Logan this is crazy, I don't know about your culture but in mine this is trapping her spirit somehow, it actually makes you look like a witch

He giggled

Him: maybe I am

Me: but you don't look like one

Him: how do witches look like

I shrugged

Him: I wanna let her go Liya I really do

Me: then do it, you can't be living with a dead body or keep one in your house, it's crazy



He stumbled as he tried to stand up and I found myself helping him, he balanced his arm around my shoulder

Him: am I a bad person?

I huffed

Me: sometimes

He chuckled

Him: maybe that's why she left me in this cruel world to suffer

I kept quiet and just led him to his room

He threw himself on the bed

Him: I'm a bad man, I've done bad things

Me: set your wife free let the dead rest, so that you can also move on, it might not be easy but it's the right thing to do, I'm sure she also wants that for herself, you haven't been moving on coz she's right above you, I don't know whether you expect her to wake up someday and tell you

what led her to her suicide but that's not gonna happen, coz this is no fairy tale Mr Logan

He was facing up and mumbling something to himself

This was not going anywhere, so I left him there, took my things and left. I arrived at Lindos and changed into shorts, vest and fluffy slides then unpacked my things and studied. Later on I cooked, It was around 19:30 when Lindo arrived with his girlfriend

Him: I'm home and it smells good in here

Me: it's nothing like your food just meatballs and macaroni

A light skinned girl followed behind him, she looked pretty

Lindo: baby this is Liyakha, Lee meet my woman Sonto

Lindo walked to the fridge

I walked closer to her

Me: nice to finally meet you

I motioned for her to shake my hand but instead she just looked at me from head to toe then just took off her jacket

Sonto: like wise

She walked passed me to the lounge

Lindo: I'm starving

Me: I'll dish up for you guys I've already eaten

Sonto: don't worry yourself I'll dish up for me and MY MAN

YHO ok drag queen.

Me: okay, I'll be in my room

I didn't even entertain her over done self with eyelashes working overtime

Later on I took a shower and went to bed didn't even bother going to the lounge. It wasn't long

when I heard loud voices

Sonto: then what is she to you

Lindo: just a friend that I'm helping out

Her: really? She had barely there shorts almost naked in your kitchen is she the reason you've been scarce lately

Really? My shorts where almost mid thigh it's not like my butt was hanging out or something

Lindo: Sonto I called you everyday sent you texts, I told you I wasn't around when I was in town I was busy with practice

Sonto: I don't trust her around you

Lindo: she's just a kid and I care about her to just throw her on the streets

Sonto: you better choose who you want

Lindo: now that's just crazy

Sonto: so I'm crazy? Is that what you're implying

Lindo: I'm done with this shit

I heard the door bang

Maybe I should go back home instead of causing trouble for other people.

[05/26, 20:20] : Insert 20

I was at the lounge the following morning having my breakfast when Sonto walked in She took the remote on the table and changed the channel totally ignoring me, she had eye bags with a congested looking nose, it made me feel bad like I was the cause of her tears

Me: I'm sorry for causing problems between you and your man

She just glanced at me then back at the TV

Me: Believe me I'd leave right now if I had a place to go but I don't

She looked at me

Her: I'm used to skanky girls like you boo, you don't intimidate me just look at my man in a way I don't understand and I'll be all over you like heat rash

To say I was stunned would be an understatement

She stood up and took the remote with

I just finished my breakfast and went to rinsed my bowl, I felt a tap on my shoulder

Lindo: I've been talking to myself I see

Me: hey didn't see you there

Him: troubled thoughts?

I shrugged my shoulders

Him: is it Sonto?

I just shrugged

me: I think I should leave

Him: leave??

Me: I don't wanna cause problems for you guys

Him: what are you talking about

Me: I heard you fight yesterday

Him: we weren't fighting but just resolving some misunderstanding

Me: it was because of me, and I think Sonto is right maybe I should leave

Him: Liyakha who's house is this?

Me: huh

Him: who's house are you living in?

Me: yours

Him: did I say you should leave or anything along those lines

I shook my head

Him: then stop with the stupid suggestions

We both giggled coz that's what I said when he suggested the pregnancy thing

Him: let me whip some breakfast

Me: I've already eaten cereal

Him: that's okay but it's time for real breakfast, let me grab a quick shower first

I nodded

He pecked my forehead

Him: this is your home too, and I love having you around you keep me sane, now take a seat I'll be right back

I just sat on the high stool

Soon enough he was back

Him: what would you like to eat

Me: anything you make would do

Sonto walked in and sat across me closer to where Lindo was making bacon



Her: you never was this keen to make me breakfast before

Lindo kissed her lips

Him: but I always make you breakfast baby when i have time

Her: I'm saying you weren't this excited about it

Lindo just continued with what he was doing

Me: I'll be in my room

Lindo: please sit

He huffed and lowered the stove

Him: Sonto this is Liyakha, she's a friend of mine nothing more, I wouldn't have brought you here if there was anything going on between us, you're my woman and I love you so let's all behave like adults, I care about her and I'm being honest with you you know I've always been straight up. If I was sharing a bed with her except for when she has nightmares and she

uses her own blanket I would've told you

Sonto: so you have shared a bed with her

Lindo: is that the only thing you picked up from all that I've said

Sonto stood up furiously

Her: you said you shared a bed with her Lindo

Lindo: you know what this is not going anywhere

Sonto: I want the truth damn it Lindo

Him: I just told you the truth, she's a friend that I care about and can't and won't throw her out because of your stupid insecurities

Her: so I'm now stupid?

Him: stop putting words in my mouth

Her: you just said I'm stupid because of some lousy teenage girl, really?

I walked away right there went to my room and

packed my things in two huge plastic bags and headed downstairs, the two were still arguing when Lindo spotted me he came towards me

Him: what's this?

Me: I'm going home

Him: what home?

Me: my home

Sonto: let her go kanti why do you care so much ab...

Lindo: would you just shut up!!

Sonto held on to her waist

Me: i hate that you guys are fighting because of me

Lindo literally snatched the plastics from me and left me there stunned , he came back shortly without them but with his sports bag

Him: if anyone is leaving it's me...

Sonto: why is it so easy for you to move in with a friend but not with me? I literally begged you a few months back to come stay here coz I had some financial strains and you bluntly told me to find a cheaper place to rent or move back home, what's so special about this girl

Lindo walked out and locked us both inside leaving with the key

Sonto looked at me the stormed out to their room and I walked to the room I was using and got under the covers, to think that it was still morning and I was left with a fire dragon was just frustrating.

The sun began to set and there was still no sign of Lindo, that's when I heard a knock

Me: come in

Sonto peaked through the door

Her: hey

Aibo, what has changed so fast?

Me: hello

She came in and sat at the corner of my bed

Her: look I just want us to be grown up about this

I nodded

Her: as long as there's an understanding and set grounds about this whole arrangement between you and my man then I'll learn to live with it

I nodded

Her: Lindo is a man, my man to be precise, walking around in shorts around him could make you seem like an easy target and as if you're trying your luck with him and he sees you as a sister, a friend nothing more

Me: I know my place here Sonto

Her: good, truce?

She held out her hand

Me: truce

I shook her hand

Her: this doesn't make us friends or whatever...

Me: I know

She's just like that shame I don't blame her, I think I would also throw a fit if my man was living with a girl, but I've done nothing to come across as seductive or anything towards Lindo

Her: and the sharing a bed with him stops

Me: I absolutely understand

Her: good

She stood up and tossed her expensive looking hair then walked out

That went well.

I got up and went to cook, but to my surprise she was already at it

Me: can I help with peeling anything

Her: don't worry hun I got this

I walked to the lounge and surprisingly the remote was on the table I turned on the sports channel and watched some basketball game that was on

I heard the door open

Lindo: is it safe to come in

I giggled to myself

Sonto: come babe I've cooked

Lindo walked in

Him: smells good, what are you making?

Her: you'll find out soon

She walked to Lindo and wrapped her hands around his waist stood on her tiptoes and kissed him Lindo dropped his bag and held her

Lindo: what have I done to deserve this

Sonto: nothing I just realized how lucky I am

Lindo: it's about damn time

He let her go and walked to me

Him: you good?

I nodded

Him: alright then, you need to give me your exam timetable so I know when to drop you off and pick you up

Me: I can use taxis

Him: if you find one around this neighborhood please let me know

I jokingly punched his shoulder

Me: an Uber then

Him: those are amazingly expensive

Me: I just don't wanna bother you

Him: you don't , but you will if you ambush me so it will be better when I have the schedule



I nodded

Me: thank you

Him: don't mention it

Me: you're a great guy Lindo

Him: let me go freshen up before I get big headed real quick

I giggled and he walked away

Sonto dished up and we ate and went to bed.

I saw Mr Logan's wife standing right by my head, I wanted to scream for help but my voice couldn't come out, she was weighing on me I felt my chest tighten and my airway constricted I wanted to scream for help but couldn't my mouth opened but no words came out I cried out loud and that's when I heard Lindos voice from afar, he shook me violently and that's when I came out of whatever nightmare that was

Him: shhhh it's just a dream, hey calm down and just breath

I was holding on to his vest for dear life and he also wrapped his arms around me, I was sweating profusely

Him: geez what triggered these again? You were much better these past few days

I saw Sonto standing by the door with her arms folded on her chest, she didn't looked pleased at all, I gently moved Lindo from me

Me: I'm okay you can go now

He looked at me like I was crazy, probably because he knows I usually beg him to wait until I fall asleep and leave the door open but I just told him to go

Sonto: she said she's fine

Me: yeah really I am

I faked a smile

Him: you can go to bed babe I'll wait till she's asleep

Sonto turned on her heels clicked her tongue and left

Him: I'll sit by the window till you sleep okay

I nodded then got under the covers

Me: I feel like I'm in a Confined Space Lindo where everything isn't going my way and everyone is gunning for me, i seem to attract negativity and cause trouble everywhere I go, nothing is in my favor Lindo, dad left, my brother had his way with me, I literally sold myself, now I'm being haunted I can't help but wonder what will happen with you, maybe I h....

Sonto: are you coming to bed?

Lindo: Sonto I will come to bed just not yet

He sounded annoyed

I couldn't hold my tears anymore, I silently cried

my way to sleep, I'm pretty sure his life was perfect before I came along, when I'm around nothing seems to go well, something is wrong with me

[05/27, 08:22] : Insert 21

3 weeks later

I'm almost done with my exams and I'm so nervous about what's to come next, I mean most bursary applications are closed so varsity isn't an option at this moment so I just need to get a job somewhere somehow, at least I'll have matric that's of course if I pass but I think I've done well. Lindo is out of the country for a basketball game in the US, he's been gone for 4 days and he calls every night until I've fallen asleep, sometimes he doesn't say much but just waits until I'm asleep, he says it doesn't

bother him coz it's daytime anyway on his side, Oh Sonto left day after Lindo spent the night in my room and no it wasn't intentional, he fell asleep on the chair while keeping an eye on me, I woke him up a bit too late coz Sonto was already fuming she packed her bags and left, Lindo said they fixed things but she doesn't wanna come over coz I'm still here, see? More reason for me to get a job and move Out. It was during the day I was preparing for my final exam which was for biology the following day, and I was sure as hell gonna nail it when someone knocked, I wasn't expecting anyone and all Lindos friends knew he was away, so I avoided it but it didn't go away so I stood up annoyed AF what could be so important that the person didn't wanna give up, it was the mail man

Me: hey

Him: miss booi?

I nodded but was confused coz no one knew my current address

Him: next time could you please come quick especially because your package is extra heavy

He handed me a medium sized box and true to his word it was damn heavy

Him: have a good day ma'am

He walked away

I kicked the door and walked to the lounge, I wonder what's in here, I was afraid to open it what if Mr Logan found out about Lindo and he thought I'm the one who snitched on him trying to ruin his image, what if someones head was in here, Mr Logans way of sending me a message, I wanted to open it but was afraid, what if what I see in there won't make me sleep at night and Lindo isn't around, what if the Mrs Logan's dream was a warning, if anybody knows my address is Mr Logan he's the only

one who can track me here he has connections everywhere he's a wealthy man, I put the box on the counter and called Lindo

Him: hey

He sounded asleep

Me: hey

Him: Snow Flake I'm sleeping

Me: I got a package from the mail man

Him: what package?

Me: a box

Him: what's in it?

Me: I haven't opened it

Him: why not?

Me: I wanted to open it with you here

Him: why not now?

Me: because...

He groaned in frustration

Me: I'm just afraid, what if there's someone's head in the it's pretty heavy

Him: ok, listen I'm flying in tomorrow morning my games are done anyway

Me: ok I'll wait

Him: okay can I sleep now

Me: sure

He hung up

I couldn't focus on anything after that but the box on the counter, my gut wouldn't allow me to open it. I concluded my studying and cooked, later on I went to bed

\*\*\*\*\*

The following day was f\*\*\*ed up longer than usual I felt like Lindo was taking forever to get here even though I knew he wouldn't be here until the early hours of the morning but I



couldn't help the anxiety, at time I would find myself staring at that box it wasn't dripping blood or anything but I couldn't help the feeling that whatever was in there was gonna change my life forever.

I was writing midday so I cleaned around and cooked then went to shower I finished around 11:30 and requested an Uber.

It was around 15:30 when I returned for my exam and I honestly didn't know how it went my mind was too preoccupied with thoughts of "the mystery box"

I didn't even feel like eating I just sat on the high stool waiting for Lindo. The sun had set and every slight movement had me peaking outside the window hoping its Lindo.

It was past midnight my eyelids were getting heavy on me.

Him: Snow Flake

I battered my eyes open

Him: hey

Me: hey

I wiped off the drool from my mouth, I literally fell asleep staring at this daunting box

Him: you okay

I nodded and pulled the box to me

He chuckled

Him: so this is the mystery box huh

I gave him a nasty stare

Me: there could be a bomb in here

Him: believe me sweetheart if there was I would be arranging your funeral right now, so open it

I moved from the chair to the lounge and sat on the floor

Lindo giggled

Him: ai this box is serious mos

Me: come sit

Him: Snow Flake I'm tired and jet legged AF, I would really like to get this over and done with so I can go to bed

I gave him the puppy face look

He dropped his gym bag

Him: fine! Fine.

He sat across me

Him: geez open the box already

I said a short prayer and took a deep breath and slowly remove the tape around it, when I opened it there were shredded paper on to as I remove those there was a note

“A wise young lady said I should let the dead rest”

My heart started pounding hard almost out of

my chest, Lindo didn't even notice my reaction he was in and out of sleep. I removed the shreds and there in my face were R200 notes staked nicely as if to deliver to a wealthy someone, in my head I was screaming my lungs out but physically I was dumbstruck I literally froze

Lindo: what's in the box

He was yawning

Me: mon...money

Him: could you be for real for once please

Liyakha I'm tired

I tore the rest of the box open and some of it fell on his feet that's when he woke up

Him: what the hell??

Tears filled my eyes he literally jumped to his feet

Him: what's this?

Me: money

Tears dropped on my cheeks

Him: I can see that but...

Me: Mr Logan sent it

Him: why would he...

Me: the arrangement we had

My voice was low and rusty

Him: this is too much Snow...

Me: it's actually half of it

Him: how much did he actually pay for..

He cleared his throat

Him: I don't wanna know, what are you gonna do with it?

Me: go to school

Him: and?

Me: I don't know maybe buy a house

Him: and???

Me: and a car

He chuckled

Him: you need to invest some of it and maybe buy shares into companies, maybe go for financial literacy first but school is definitely a good idea

I nodded

Him: wow Lee this is a lot of money

Me: yeah

Him: you should probably get a safe where you'll lock it up coz putting it into your account will get a lot of law people on your tail

I nodded still sitting on the floor

Him: Snow Flake

He kneeled next to me

Him: are you okay

Me: yeah, I'm just overwhelmed a bit, I've never had or seen so much money in my life

Him: do good with it, spoil yourself and all you deserve it

I nodded

He pulled me up and gave me a hug

Him: breath you're gonna be okay, it's gonna be okay

I literally began sobbing

Maybe the whole arrangement with Mr Logan wasn't all bad, it wasn't the best of choices but it's about to change my life for the better and as I've guessed it'll change my life forever, I cried till I had hiccups Lindo was holding me to his chest hushing me and I was just feeling a lot of emotions all at once, sadness because of what I went through, rage towards my half brother, great full for meeting Lindo he was truly god sent, excitement for the future, a lot was going

on in my head and I couldn't process it all at once so my cries calmed me down a bit

Him: come on now no one has been blown out this room by a bomb or is there

I giggled and moved away from him

Me: thank you

Him: for what?

Me: taking me in

I really couldn't hold the tears

Him: it's nothing honestly

Me: to me it meant a lot

He nodded

Him: now clean up your money I don't want people coming in here thinking we robbed a bank or worse high jacked the money car

I giggled a bit

The sun was already rising



Him: let me go to bed Snow Flake I'm beyond tired

He pecked my forehead

I nodded

He walked away

I looked at this money on the floor and it felt like a dream that's when I screamed out loud, maybe this was the beginning of greater things in life.

[05/27, 08:22] : Insert 22

It was Friday and I had just walked in from one of those financial literacy workshops, Lindo had booked me for 3 days, I honestly felt like it was repetition but it really helped me broaden my narrow thinking of what to do with the R2,5 million it was a lot, I didn't wanna sit back and relax I wanted to go study, Lindo mentioned

that there was gonna be late enquiry at UJ early January I wanted to go for architecture or anything that has to do with art, I was once an artistic child before shit hit the fan I literally forgot about my hobbies, a wise man once said “when you’re surviving you can’t dream” that’s what I’ve been doing for the past couple of years, Lindo was on the couch with his feet on the table, one of the things I noticed about Lindo is that he’s a neat freak and a perfectionist, I would say he has OCD everything he does he does it in a certain way it’s almost as if there’s a guideline for it, it’s crazy honestly.

Me: hey

I threw myself on the couch next to him

Him: hey, how did it go

Me: nothing to brag about honestly I feel like it’s a repetition

Him: you'll see the point of it all soon

I sighed

Me: I'm starving

Him: I made lasagne it's in the oven

Me: you're a life saver

I dished up for myself

Him: there's a party at my friends place tonight  
wanna go?

Me: nah I'll pass I just wanna work on my  
drawings remember you said they might want a  
profile at UJ

Him: ok then I'll probably go past Sontos place  
afterwards

Me: cool

Him: let me get ready then

\*\*\*\*\*

Two months later

Fortunately God was with me this time around, I got accepted at UJ for fine art, I was over the moon considering the fact that it was late application, as Lindo had mentioned they wanted a profile which I produced and there was one interview and I was accepted it was too late for any funding application but thank heavens for the Mr L arrangement.

It was my first day at school and I was trying to find my way around campus and locate my classes, this campus was sooo confusing, Lindo had dropped me off earlier, he said I should take my time finding my own place but I wanted to get out of his hair already, he was still a sweetheart but I felt like I was cramping his style, anyways I was walking around trying to figure out what was what around here, a lot of people were minding their own business I didn't wanna bother anyone for one they didn't

seem like they wanted to be bothered, if they had no ear phones on they were intensely focusing on their phones or laughing at something on it, yah I didn't think it was gonna be like high school but I also didn't think they would be this closed off. I sighed as I walked around, I finally knew that the mini shopping center was the student center and that the classes are alphabetically coordinated so I just had to find my venue that was a bit confusing, even though I had decided not to bother anyone I decided to bother at least one person, there was this guy standing alone facing away from me he didn't seem occupied so I approached him and tapped him on the shoulder

Me: excuse me, I'm a bit lost where can I...

I wasn't even looking at him but going through the printed time table I had in my hand

Him: Liyakha

That's when I literally froze

I didn't even look at his face I turned around and walked away

He quickly grabbed my arm

Him: let go of me you're hurting me

Him: oh my it really is you.

Me: please let go

Him: your brother has been worried sick about you

I wriggle my arm out of his hold

Me: oh please Sphiwe

Remember him? The guy who once bought me pads sent by my so cold brother

Me: really? We both know he misses his sex slave

Him: Liya....

Me: no!!! No!!!

Tears filled my eyes

Me: just leave me alone!

My voice was breaking I couldn't deal with this,  
it was just too much

I stomped away to the toilets and cried my eyes  
out

When i walked out there was a crowd watching,  
as if I cared! I took out my phone and called  
Lindo

Him: hey

He sounded out of breath

Me: oh sorry I didn't know you were busy

Him: I'm at the gym how's school

I sighed

Him: that bad huh?

I sniffed

Him: come on it can't be that bad

Me: it's okay I have class in the next ten minutes

him: ok I'll see you when you're done

Me: bye

I hung up

Theres really no point crying over spilled milk

I wiped my face and went to class.

School was just ok, it was mainly introductions and a bit of content. It ended earlier than scheduled, I sent Lindo a text and waited by gate1,

I was just going through my phone when he spoke

Him: baby sis

I swear I released a bit of pee on my

Underwear and froze on the spot

Him: hey



He touched my shoulder and I cringed, he removed his hand

Him: baby sis...

Me: don't call me that!

It was a whisper but he heard

Him: Liyakha please talk to me, come back home

me: home?? What home??? You mean your dick home? Please enlighten me

Him: don't be so loud

Me: really? loud? Fuck you!!!

He roughly grabbed my arm

Me: let go!!!

Him: you will not swear at me! I'm still your older brother

Me: FUCK YOU!!

His hand was about to slap me when someone

blocked it

Lindo: trust me you don't wanna try that

Thato pushes him off

Thato: you don't get to tell me what to and not do to my sister

Lindo: oh so you're the rapist! I finally get to put the face on the scumbag

He was so cool it was too much

Thato clenched his jaw

Thato: oh please man you know nothing!

Lindo: Snow Flake lets go

Thato: she's not going anywhere

Lindo: watch her

He took my hand and led us to his car opened the door for me and also got in

Thato was busy yelling and calling me all sorts of names attracting everyone's attention good

lord on my first day what a coward, Lindos hold on the steering wheel was a bit too tight, I just looked out the window and cried I couldn't hold it anymore it was too much. I must've fallen asleep crying coz I woke up when Lindo tried to lift me up

Me: I'm awake I'll walk

He let go

I walked to my room and sat on the bed he also walked in shortly after and sat next to me

Him: don't let him get to you

Me: how can I not Lindo

My eyes were getting blurry

Him: you're doing just fine, he enjoys seeing you miserable don't give him that satisfaction

I sniffed

Me: my head hurts

Him: I'll get you some water

He did just that

Him: you must be tired

Me: just a bit

Him: take a nap then I'll cook

He kissed my forehead and left, I slid inside my sheet and slept.

It wasn't long when I felt a heavy figure on top weighing me down almost depriving me of a much needed breath, I tried to fight it off but it was too heavy, someone was slightly tapping my face

Lindo: Snow Flake it's just a dream wake up

I slowly opened my eyes and there he was

He looked concerned and kept stroking my hair

Him: this needs to stop Snow Flake

Me: I'm fine

I sat up

Him: you're not, you need to talk to someone

Me: but I talk to you

He sighed

Him: I'm worried about you and these nightmares, it's not normal to just sweat like this and scream as if you're in agony

I looked at him

He sighed

Him: the food is ready

Me: I'll be down in a sec

He kissed my sweaty forehead

Me: eww

He giggled

Him: clean up then and come eat

[05/27, 08:22] : Insert 23

The following day I didn't feel like going to school, I just lay in bed and watch the interesting ceiling, even though Lindo said I shouldn't give Thato that satisfaction i also couldn't just erase what happened, I was really young when he started doing that, it started with him touching me and then I had to touch him, when touching wasn't enough he resorted to penetration, nobody ever dreams of losing their innocence like that, even though he wasn't rough about it but still, I wanted a romantic evening with candle lights and soft music on the background and my knight in shining armor, I wanted to be kissed and held in a certain, a night I would always remember, not that I don't remember that day coz it's so vivid I can't erase but that's not how I wanna remember losing my virginity especially not to my brother, Lindo walked in

He didn't say anything he just lay next to me and also faced up

Me: I don't feel like going to school today

Him: now that's just crazy talk

He was so calm

Me: I'm not feeling well

Him: yeah right

He balanced on his hand as he turned and looked at me, I just continued looking up

Him: listen you're gonna miss your first class of the day but I'm not gonna let you miss the next 2, so I'm giving you 30 minutes to get ready or I'm dragging you to school in this onesie

He got off the bed

Me: but..

Him: 30 minutes snow flake

He just walked out

I remained in bed I honestly thought he was bluffing, 45 minutes later he came budging in and lifted me off the bed kicking and screaming

Me: ok please let me take a 5 minutes shower

He wasn't taking any of that he shoved me in the car with my bag and drove off

Me: I can't go to school like this Lindo

Him: looks like you want to

He really drove me to school in my onesie, heh this guy wasn't serious

He parked by the entrance

Him: see you later I have practice in the next hour

Me: Lindo please

Him: you want me to drag you to class too

I started fake crying

Him: wipe off those crocodile tears they make



your morning face look worse.

What? Did he honestly just say that

Me: I just wanna take a shower

Him: no you don't, I gave you more than enough time

Now I was really crying

Me: I can't go to class looking like this

He got off and came to my side he was really gonna drag me out

Me: please, please, please Lindo not like this, it's my second day and I'm already coming to school looking a mess, I promise I'll catch up I wont fall behind just today

He closed the door and walked to his side and drove back to the house

I actually giggled to myself

Him: I'm glad you found it funny

Me: where you honestly gonna drag me to class?

I laughed and he joined in

Me: you're crazy

Him: you're not gonna throw your entire future down the drain because of some shit you went through in the past, I won't let you

His phone beeps

Him: shit I forgot I had to meet up with Sonto

Me: sorry it's my fault

Him: it's actually mine

He dropped me by the gate

Him: il be back for dinner

I nodded and he drove off

I signed in on the Uj website and just checked what I missed out on for today and went through the notes

Later on I cooked and watched TV, I was gonna

dish up when Lindo got here.

It was a few minutes after 11 and he wasn't back yet, which was so unlike him, he usually text if he's not coming back, I wanted to call and ask but what if he's with Sonto then I'll be causing trouble.

I must've fallen asleep on the couch coz I woke up when I heard his car pull up, I waited but he didn't come in so I went to check on him, he was kneeling on the floor crying his nose was bleeding I quickly went to him

Me: oh my God, Lindo what happened

He just continued crying he smelled like a shebeen

Me: can you stand?

He couldn't even balance which made me wonder how he drove here

I literally dragged him in and leaned him on the

couch, I went to get a towel and ice his nose  
looked swollen I was busy wiping his face

Me: Lindo..

Him: she's pregnant

Me: wow, congratulations?

It was more of a question coz I didn't  
understand why he's so messed up about it?

Him: she's not sure who the daddy is

Me: what's that suppose to mean?

Him: it means she was getting worked up about  
you staying here because she thought I was  
doing what she's doing

Okay I'm a bit confused

Him: she's been screwing me and some guy  
that works at a bank

Me: oh I'm so sorry Lindo

Him: don't apologize it's not your fault

Me: she's not sure, which means it could be yours

Him: she shouldn't even be questioning that, what was she doing in the first place? Worst part she didn't even use protection

Me: let's be positive about this

He chuckled

Him: how can I be positive about being cheated on? She always knew I wanted a baby, she knew Snow Flake

I didn't know how to comfort him right now he looked so broken the alcohol making it worse

Me: what happened to your nose and knuckles

Him: just had to teach the guy a lesson

Me: violence isn't always the answer

Him: I just had to

He looked at me, the look in his eyes I couldn't

stand, he reminded me of the day I lost my mother, he looked like he lost everything, he really loved her which broke my heart too, I didn't know how to comfort him so I did the first thing that came into mind and pecked his lips, he looked at me puzzled, I went back again and kissed him, my tiny hands on his neck I sucked on his lips and he kissed me back. No! I never felt that way for him I always saw him as a brother, he's always been there for me and right now I didn't know how to be here for him, the only experience I have of men is that sex makes them forget and feel better, I wanted to make him better and this is the only way I know how.

I climbed on top of him and continued to kiss him, I took his hands and placed them on my ass he released a groan from his throat and stopped kissing me then gently pushed me off and sat me on the floor next to him

Him: I'm sorry

Why is he apologizing? I'm the one who should be.

Him: I'm going to bed

He stumbled to his feet and walked to his room

I felt so stupid, I honestly didn't know what to do but it's not an excuse to act so cheap. I stood up and tidied up then also went to bed.

I woke up the following morning early I didn't want to face him at least not today, so I was gonna stay at school until late and get an Uber back, when I walked into the kitchen he was standing by the fridge in his gym attire looked like he just came from jogging

Him: morning I've been waiting for you to wake

Me: ummh I.... I'm..... I'm late for class I gotta go..

Him: your class starts at 10:30 and it's 07:00 right now

Me: I...

Him: take a seat let's talk

I sat on the high stool

Me: I'm sorry about last night, Lindo if you want me out I'll be gone by the end of today I...

Him: no I'm sorry, maybe I did something to lead you on or make you think I wanted that but no I don't want you like that, you're too innocent  
Snow Flake

Me?? Innocent?? Are we talking about the same person here?

Me: I shouldn't have kissed you I just didn't know what to do when you needed me, you know how to comfort me but i don't, and it made me feel horrible, I thought maybe if we ummmh.... you would feel better

Him: no I would actually feel worse today if I went through with it



I nod

Me: did you talk to Sonto?

Him: I don't wanna talk about that right now

I nod

Him: can we go back to before last night?? I don't want you tip toeing around me because of it, it happened and we talked about it

Me: and it won't happen again I promise

Him: good then make breakfast I'll freshen up and take you to school

I nodded, I know he said we talked and it's done but I'm still awkward AF around him, what was I thinking, geez!!

[05/27, 08:23] : Insert 24

He walks in and I'm wrapped in a towel dripping wet, the first thing he does is plant a kiss on my

bare shoulders and my southern part clamps, he drops the towel on the floor and I'm left naked, his fingers trace from the upper part of my back all the way above my ass

Him: Gosh baby you're so f\*\*n hot

I can't help the moan that escapes my lips

He has pinned me against the closest and his mouth is everywhere I want him to be, the next thing he's thrown me carelessly on the bed and crawls up to my face, his two fingers are on my wet folds and I'm really close. That's when I wake up covered in sweat and I've peed on myself again, this needs to stop it's been going on for a month now and I can't seem to have a night without dreaming of him buried deep inside me

I wake up change into a onesie and go get some cold water, it's a few minutes after 1am

When I get into the kitchen he's in his boxers

browsing through the fridge, good Lord this is  
why these dreams will never go away

Him: hey sleepless night

I'm brought back to reality by his voice

Me: yah

Him: you can go ahead I'm so undecided on  
what I want

I go passed him and get water

Him: we can watch some movies I've got the  
latest ones in my laptop

In that?? No thank you I might be tempted to  
make my dreams come true, Literally!

Me: nah I just needed some water I'll go back  
to bed

He nods

I do just that

The following morning I had to move my things

to my apartment, yep I'm definitely moving out can't deal, Lindo is totally against it and I had planned to move by month end but the two weeks seem so far away, maybe if I'm away the dreams will go away, it all started a few days after the kissing incident and it's all I think about, I wonder what he could do, I would fantasize about it, I don't know why this happens but I don't want it to, it feels so weird. I walked out to the lounge pulling my suitcase

Lindo: hau I thought we agreed that you were gonna move out when you've got your license, and besides it's not month end yet

Me: I just wanna give you your space back

Him: I don't mind having you here

Me: nah I just

Him: besides your lease only starts by month end

Me: please just let me go I don't wanna be here

anymore

Don't ask me why I was getting worked up coz I also don't know

Him: come sit

He patted the space next to him, I totally ignored him and sat on the couch facing him

Him: did I do or say something to offend you

I shook my head

Him: then what's wrong

Me: I just want my own space Lindo please

Him: until month end then I'm out of your hair besides you don't even have the keys for your new place

Me: no...

Him: Snow Flake..

I snapped

Me: I'm just tired of dreaming of you fucking my

brains out each and every night

To say he was stunned would be an understatement

I quickly got up and dragged my bag outside, luckily the Uber had just arrived

I quickly got in as he was yelling behind me

I had already spoken to the landlord and the keys were at the security detail by the gate

I got there and went straight to my apartment, luckily it came fully furnished so I was sorted just needed to get bedding, appealing curtains and some homely accessories

It was dusty a lot so I just got to it and cleaned up, it wasn't much but it was what I want

I finished up then showered and went shopping for a few things

I got to checkers hyper and got food and most of what I need then went to some bedding shop

then that was it

When I got back to the apartment I was exhausted, this license thing had to happen real quick coz o desperately needed a car, for one the apartment was a bit far from campus and town so see, I made up the bed put on the curtains and roasted some lamb on low heat, I was so exhausted i fell asleep balancing on the kitchen counter

A loud bang from the door woke me up, it was Lindo

Gosh remind me why I asked him to help me look for an apartment?

Me: I'm coming

I dragged my feet to the door, I don't know but I just didn't feel like seeing him, coz for one I hated how I suddenly felt around him, I didn't want these feelings or whatever they are

He was by the door in his gym gear

Him: are you for real? I've been banging on that door for ages

Me: I'm sorry I was asleep

He pushed passed me and walked in, Great!!  
Just what I needed .

Him: how long have you had those dreams

Me: why does it matter

Him: I just wanna know

Me: a month or so

Him: and you didn't tell me?

Me: how was that gonna help?

Him: talking about things help

Me: this doesn't need talking

Him: then what does it need?

Me: I don't know ok!!

Him: maybe you should find a hobby or



something, or just speak to a shrink

Me: that won't help either

Him: then what will?? Coz you seem to have an idea since you're declining my every option

Me: I don't know

Him: come on Liya....

Me: I don't know maybe if we did exactly what I seem to fantasize about it will make the dreams go away, having you inside me so that it won't be something I Long for coz it seems like ever since that night it's all I think about

His jaw was literally on the floor

Great now I sound loose.

Him: I can't...

Me: then stop nagging me about it

He sighed and dropped his bag on the floor

Him: maybe if you speak to someone, a

professional it will help

Me: I told you what might help so...

Him: except for that

I shrugged

He sighed

Him: what you're asking of me is too much

Me: I know, I get it you probably don't wanna bonk someone who's been fucking around

Him: that's not it

Me: then what is it?

Him: I don't wanna ruin what we have by doing that

Me: it's a once off thing

Him: no, let's try some other means

Me: I cooked are you hungry

Try by all means to change the subject coz

rejection doesn't feel so good

He nodded

I dished up for both of us and we ate, I was having my meal with wine a habit I learned from him and he just drank water, I was going a little heavy on the wine but who cares?

Me: how's Sonto?

Did I mention she came begging for him to take her back and he did, he even said he didn't want a paternity test done for whatever reason, he really loves her

Him: she's okay

He never really talked about what happened so I let him

I rinsed our plates, it was really late

Him: I gotta get going

Me: what don't you sleep over it's really late there's two bedrooms or you can use the couch

if you want

He looked at me for a while almost as if he didn't trust me being around him in this state

Him: ok I'll take the other bedroom

Call me loose or whatever but I'm a woman on a mission especially with this alcohol influence, I was gonna get what I want I just hope he's as good in real life as on the dreams

Me: I'll fix the other room for you

I did just that

Me: I'm sleepy

He just stared at me

Me: what? Should I borrow you my nightdress?

He laughed

Him: no thank you I just need a shower

Me: that way

I pointed him to the direction

He got up and went to take a shower, i changed into my short lacy almost see through nighty, I told you I was on a mission

He came out wrapped in a towel around his waist probably the one he uses at the gym

Me: your room is this way

I walked in front of him, I know this nightdress is pretty short it might just do the trick

I opened and he followed after me

Him; goodnight

I guess a way to dismiss me but I wasn't having that

This liquor was on another level, I walked towards him, he looked uncomfortable and took one step back and I guess he remembered he had to man up, he can't be running away from p\*\*\*y

He stopped and I stood right in front of him and

dropped the tiny streps off my shoulders and let the rest of it drop to the floor, I was left butt naked

He cleared his throat

Him: Snow Flake

His voice was a bit hoarse which means it was working

Me: just this once

Him: I just don't...

I stood on my tiptoes and kissed him, with my bare breasts on his dripping chest and he took a deep breath in, I was so plastered onto him I felt him harden and he groaned

I slipped my tongue in, what frustrates me is that he's standing there not touching me, I did what I did he first time and led his hands to my ass and the difference this time is that it was bare, he grabbed it and squeezed, now that's a

great start, my hands went to his back and I loved the feel of muscles just above his firm butt, my finger tips dances around his back and his hold on my butt tightened, I undid his towel and carelessly dropped it on the floor

Gosh these dreams never revealed how gifted he is, I then pushed him backwards until he sat on the edge of the bed then I positioned myself on him, his hands grabbed on both my twins

Him: fuck you're something else

I went back to lip locking and brought my front to his hardened member, he took control of the kiss, this time his tongue slipped in and his breath had changed, he did things to my mouth and turned us around laying me on the bed while getting between my legs

His hand palms my cookie and he silently cursed, his mouth dropped to my chest and he had his mouth latched on my hardened nipple,

he grabbed his guy and directed it to my opening he tried to push in but couldn't

He rubbed his member up and down on my wet folds and groaned in appreciation

Him: this is gonna hurt a little

I giggled

Me: I'm not a Virgin

Him: I know that

He pushed in slowly and I felt him everywhere stretching me wide, gosh this is better than the dreams

He was groaning all the way in, when he started thrusting in and out I swear I saw stars, I released a breath I didn't know I was holding and grabbed his waist

Him: oh my God

He stared directly into my eyes and slowly captured my lips into a slow sultry kiss,



Him: Snow Flake

His voice just sent tingles all over my body

Me: mmmh

Him: are you okay

Me: I'm more than okay

His pace increased and I felt like something was building up inside me, all the pressure went between my legs the next thing I know I'm peeing all over him, that seemed to cheer him on coz he went even harder groaning as if he's hurting somewhere then froze on top of me balancing on my sides then flopped on top of me

Him: fuck

He was breathing heavily then got up and took the towel on the floor and wiped me then himself and we both faced up

Me: I'm sorry I peed on you

Him: that's called a squirt and I loved it, I never had anyone per on me before

We both giggled

Me: I always saw it on videos but didn't think it was real

Him: it is

We laughed

Then there was silence

Him: are you okay

I nodded

Me: goodnight

He remained quiet

Me: are you okay

Him: yeah

The silence was back again and before I knew it it was lights out.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

It's all a dream

.

.

.

No it's not

[05/27, 08:23] : Insert 25

I woke up first the following morning and I felt

like a qualified seductress , Lindo was slightly snoring facing up with his palm on my butt which I've learned just last night that he's crazy about it, I was on my tummy balancing on my arms and I couldn't help but watch him sleep, here's the thing about Lindo, he's just your normal guy, nothing out of the ordinary except for his heart and those cute wet looking lips and of course his height and a bit of muscle, he's not a gym freak but he's fit with no ounce of fat, clean face no beard at all or even traces of it ever been there, again just a normal guy who sure knows how to make me squirt , oh my word just thinking about it makes me blush. Not so surprising but I didn't have that wet dream about him, probably because he took the edge off. I slowly move away from him coz I'm suddenly not so courageous anymore, I tiptoe around the room picking up my nighty and put it on, he groans as he lay on his side and I quickly

walk out. Firstly I'm nervous about his reaction today, maybe I should go out and leave him a note to leave the key under the kitchen rug. But with all the anxiety of not knowing what comes next, I don't regret anything, nothing not even peeing all over him, well that was the best part. He's the only guy I've ever given myself to willingly and I don't regret it. I take a shower and go make breakfast, as I enter the kitchen he's wrapped in his towel looking through the fridge

I cleared my throat

He turned around

Me: hi

Ok I felt a bit awkward

Him: morning

He turned back to the fridge

Me: I'll make breakfast you can go shower

He closed the fridge and walked towards me, I

realized I was by the exit

Me: sorry

I moved away and he walked passed me,

I made a mean breakfast with everything greasy,  
as I dished up he walked in fully clothed,

We both sat down and ate

Me: juice or coffee?

Him: water please

I stood up and poured him some

Breakfast was quiet, not awkward quiet but just  
quiet.

He ate and then rinsed his plate and walked  
away. Okay maybe it was awkward quiet . He  
came back carrying his bag

Him: I have to go

I nodded

Him: let me know if you need anything

Me: okay

As he walked towards the door, I couldn't let him leave like this

Me: Lindo can we talk

Him: yhuuu thought you'd never talk

I giggled

He walked back and sat opposite me

Me: about last night...

He just gave me the "carry on" look

Me: mmh I don't know what to say

Him: do you regret it?

Me: no! Hell no, I just

I sighed

Me: I wanted it, and I know you probably didn't and I just wanted to... I don't know.. apologize?

Him: really? You wanna apologize?

Me: like I said I don't know what to say, I don't wanna push you away, or you distancing yourself from me because you're afraid I'll seduce you, I know you're in a relationship and I don't wanna ruin that....

Him: whoa, slow down, breath, I'm fine, I know maybe I'm not suppose to say this but I enjoyed every moment of it, which is crazy coz I never wanted you like that until last night, I liked the fact that you came for me and totally dominated me, I've never had any woman do that to me, but I liked it

A smile creeped on my lips

Me: you do?

Him: yeah but it doesn't mean it should happen again, I don't want it to seem like I'm taking advantage of you or making you compensate for all the time you stayed with me coz I'm not like that...



Me: I know you're not, I'm the one who made a move on you

Him: now I feel like you un-man me, is there even such a word

We both laughed

I shrugged

Him: so..?

Me: yeah?

Him: mmh we didn't use protection last night

Me: really? You were on your way out a few minutes ago, when were you gonna ask

him: I was gonna text you as soon as I get to the house

I giggled

Me: I'm on contraceptive, remember the Logan deal it was a requirement, and I last tested for HIV and a lot of other diseases when I entered

the arrangement Him: I haven't been tested since Sonto revealed her situation, so I don't know my status

Me: we can go get tested

Him: together?

Me: yeah, but if it makes you uncomfortable we can do it separately but we be honest with each other

Him: Why does it sound like it's gonna happen again

Me: no it's not

Or is it?? I really couldn't tell

Him: okay

Me: do you want it to??

He cleared his throat

Him: no

Me: then it won't

Him: Snow Flake you do know I'm in a relationship right

Me: with a cheat? Someone who doesn't appreciate you? Yes that I know

I know I'm sounding like a jealous side dish but it's the truth and I told him so the moment he chose to take her back but what do I know about matters of the heart?

Him: let's not go there

Me: I know, you've said it a thousand times, you love her so I'll let you be

He nodded

Him: let me get going I'm flying this evening for a game

Me: okay, kick ass

Him: I always do

I got up and gave him a hug and he kissed my forehead

Me: travel safe

Him: I'll call you when I land and please go by the house and check if everything is intact up be back in 3 weeks

Me: that long

Him: gonna miss me?

I nodded

Him: you're a big girl now even moved out you'll be okay

Me: I know

Him: stop sulking then

He said his goodbyes and left

At least he didn't leave it on a awkward note

\*\*\*\*\*

It was one week after Lindo left, I had a late class so I decided I was gonna check on his house first then head to school, I checked the

key where he said he left it but it wasn't there, which was strange, I heard something break on the inside and I tiptoed to the door I heard a woman's voice, if it's a woman then I can take her on, I pushed the door open and the woman was crouching by the kitchen counter

Me: whoever you're get the hell out or I swear...

Her: geez what are you doing here?

I can tell it's Sonto, she didn't even turn around to acknowledge me

She was picking up glass on the floor

Me: oh hey it's you, I didn't know you were around

Her: thought you would find him alone and throw yourself at him?

Me: no I came to check on the house he didn't mention you'd be around

Her: here I am

She stood up with the broken glass

Her: now Chop chop get going

Yho I thought we were on okay terms, I guess not

Her belly was showing a bit or was it my imagination, isn't it too early for her to be showing? What am I even saying? I don't even know how far along she is besides what do I know about pregnancy

Me: I'll be on my way then

I walked out and requested an Uber to school. I had one late class that day, it was getting a bit dark outside as I waited by the gate for my Uber, until someone covered my mouth with a cloth that smelled like strong whiskey or something, my hands were grabbed in a tight hold behind me and I couldn't breath anything in except for this intoxicating smell, I tried kicking and a bit screaming but it was in vain coz the next thing

that consumed me is darkness and a banging car door.

\*excuse the errors\*

[05/27, 08:23] : Insert 26

I slowly open my eyes and I'm in fluffy pajamas, ok this is totally weird, I take in my environment and I'm in a white room with a touch of soft pink it has a few of my drawings while growing up, and a picture of me and my mom in hospital, whoever has abducted me has surely been stalking me and seemingly knows a lot about me but who? I would say Thato but I doubt he could afford such a house, I finally decide to stand up and I'm not tied up or anything which is surprising, I get up and there are fluffy sleepers next to my bed, I go towards the door and it's not locked, ok! Whoever's got me surely is too full of him/herself who

wouldn't lock in an abductee? I slowly walk down this long passage this house reminds me of Mr Logan's mansion, it's spacious and airy, I hear voices coming from down the stairs and one voice sounds familiar but I honestly can't pin point to where I exactly I know it from

Familiar voice: I said go get her I didn't say abduct her.

Male voice: sorry boss

F.voice: I don't pay you to apologize every chance you get do I?

Male voice: sor...

F.voice: I swear if you say sorry one more time, just one more time S'bu

Then it's quiet

I slowly walk tiptoe down the stairs, if only I can see an open door and run out of here, I walk until I'm at the bottom, I let the passage lead



me to what seems like a kitchen and there's a tall man facing away from me in a suit pouring water in a glass, he looks well built, I tiptoe until I bump into the kitchen bin and he quickly turns around

I swear my heart stopped for 5 seconds right there and then, I couldn't breathe my ears felt like I was under water, everything seemed to be happening in slow motion, he was moving towards me and for some reason I couldn't move I was rooted in the spot as if someone nailed me to it, there was suddenly not enough oxygen for me to take in, the walls seemed to be closing in on me and as if in slow motion he moved towards me, it's as if my lungs couldn't pump anymore, my mind was trying to put two and two together but everything didn't make sense, why now? The next thing my knees give in on me and I'm slowly on my way to the floor. I feel him catch me before my head hits the

ground. Suddenly deep sleep consumes me and I dream of my mother, whom I haven't dreamed of in a long time, we seem to be in a garden it looks like summer coz the sun is out with clear skies and there seems to be a lot of butterflies with all kinds of colors flying around us, we are on the green grass and my mom is wearing her favorite dress, the green and yellow one that hugs her in the right places, she's sitting next to me smiling at me, she doesn't say anything but she's just staring at me, suddenly I'm overcome by so many emotions all at once, I look back at her and I sob loud throwing myself at her chest, she hums her favorite song while running her hands through my hair, she feels so real as if she's right next to me, when I've finally calmed down she gently moves me away from her chest and cups my face in her hands

Mom: don't cry like this baby you're breaking my heart

Me: why now Mom?

Her: coz now is the right time baby

Tears run down my face and she wipes them off with the hem of her dress I chuckle

Me: mom that's your favorite dress

She giggles

Her: and you are my favorite person

I pay my head on her thighs like I used to

Me: I've been through so much mah

Her: I know baby

Me: no one was there for me

Her: I'm always there baby

Me: then why did you let all those things happen to me

Her: somethings are beyond our control baby, but I did my best to look out for you but it was a life you had to live

Me: why me mah?

Her: why not you? I'm not saying what happened is right or you deserve it but we all have our fair share in this life and that was yours baby

I sniffed

Then suddenly i was alone on the grass not in the comfort of my moms thighs

Me: ma!

She wasn't there anymore

Me: mama!!

I faint voice spoke

Her: it's your life to live baby

I sobbed

Me: does it ever get better??

Her: it will baby, soon it will

I woke up still crying and this man was

crouching near my head

I quickly sat up

Him: it's okay Yakha it's okay

He attempted to touch me and I moved away  
and hugged my knees

Him: Yakha

Me: don't call me that

Him: angel face

Me: leave me alone!!

I yelled at him

He sighed and stood up

Him: Ya...

Me: where were you??

He rubbed on his bold head

Me: WHERE, WERE YOU!!!

him: I...

Me: know what, I don't wanna hear it, coz the next thing that's gonna come out of your mouth is lies! Crap! That I don't wanna hear!

Take me back where you found me!

Him: I can't

I stood up so quickly and hit his hard chest with my small fists

Me: I said take me back now!! Right now

He stood there still the impact of my tiny fists wasn't felt and it was frustrating coz I wanted him to feel the pain I went through when he left and forgot about me

Me: I hate you!! I hate you so much it hurts!!

Him: I'm sorry!!

Me: take me back where you found me

Vusumuzi!!

Him: now that's enough, I'm still your father!

Me: crawl back to whatever hell hole you came from and stay there

Him: Yakha

Me: I wanna be alone, away from you!! Just let me go!!

I ran towards the door and he quickly grabbed me

Him: I know that you're angry...

Me: angry?? Really?? That's an understatement

He sighed

I started crying again, coz it hurts, he is living the dream in this huge ass house while I suffered at the hands of his son?? I suffered while he was living a luxurious life? What kind of a father is this? There's really no room in my heart for forgiveness especially for him! None zero! How can I forgive what he did? I didn't ask to be brought into this life, No!!

He left me there and locked this time. I banged on the door until my fists hurt then I crawled to the bed and cuddled myself. A few hours or so he comes back with a doctor

Me: I'm not sick

Him: you need to calm down, you've been crying for hours on end it's not good for you

Me: I'm fine!! Just leave me alone

The doctor was busy filling in the needle

Me: what is this??

Him: he's just gonna sedate you for a few hours so you can rest

Me: I don't need no sedative! I just wanna go back to where you found me

Him: Yakha please, do this for your mother

In the mention of my mother I'm suddenly calm, thinking of the dream I had



The doctor injects me and I slowly but surely fall into a peaceful sleep.

\*\*\*\*\*

To be continued

[05/27, 08:23] : Insert 27

I've been here for a week now, haven't been to school for the whole week and it was frustrating coz I really wanted to go back and achieve something for myself ,haven't said a word to my dad since, at least the door isn't locked anymore so I can freely walk around and out of the house but the gate is a no go area, I had just had dinner rinsing my plate at the sink when dad walked in with some cavy dark skinned woman rolling in a baby stroller with a girl probably a few years younger than me, she walked in and stood by the door, I just stood there and looked at them until dad cleared his

throat

Him: mmh Yakha this is Lihle the young lady is Nkazi and this little champ

He said picking up an albino baby boy from the stroller

Him: This right here is Nkosana

I just finished up and left them standing there, got to my room and lay in bed

Somehow the whole thing was making me emotional, so he left us to play happy family with some woman?? Fuck him, fuck this house and those stupid cars, I thought my dad was working in the mines, then how did he acquire all the luxury? Or does it belong to the woman? What the hell?

Soon there was a knock

Me: go away

He opened and walked in

Him: hey

I faced away from him

He sat behind me and took a deep sigh

Him: Yakha come on, this is enough now

I remained silent

Him: what do you want me to do?

Me: I wanna go back to school

Him: if you promise not to run away then I will allow you and have one of my drivers take you there and back everyday

Me: I feel like a prisoner here

Him: I know, and I'm sorry, I just don't wanna lose you again, I promised your mom that I would take care of you..,

Me: well it doesn't seem like you're good with promises

Him: I know and I apologize

Me: do you know the kind of shit I went through

He sighed

Him: yes

I turned and looked at him

Me: you do?

Him: I had to keep an eye on you

Me: and you did nothing about!! NOTHING!!!

You just watched me go through the worst in life and you did NOTHING?

Him: I had to keep you safe!

Me: what the hell are you on about?? Keep me safe?? How?? When? Please remind me

He sighed

Me: I swear if you sigh one more time just one more time Vusumuzi

He gave me a stern look and I didn't give a rat's ass

Him: it's complicated

Me: fuckin hell!! You know nothing about complications!!

Him: Yakha please

Me: no!!! Just let me go

Him: I can't do that baby

Me: shush I'm not a baby anymore the shit I went through made me grow up fast I mean real fast, so no you don't get to call me that

Him: do you think I enjoyed getting report backs about a possible rape by your own brother under my house?? Do you think it was fun to get pictures of you with your buyer?? No! That wasn't fun!! But I had no choice! Every dream I had was of your mothers cry for not keeping my promises! I had not choice!

Me: oh please we always have a choice, we choose what it is that we want, what matters in

our lives and what's best for us and you chose for yourself!

Him: Baby I didn't have a choice

Me: we....

Him: I got involved in some heavy shit okay!!! I was trying to secure a future for you guys coz the mines pay wasn't doing that!! My intentions weren't to abandon you guys!! I....

Me: that's no reason enough to leave us, we survived just fine with your salary

Him: I guess I wanted more, it was greed okay and I regret it

Me: you're still not saying anything to me, none of the things you're saying qualify as reason enough to abandon us, ME!!

Him: Yakha

Me: no..

Him: your lives were in danger

His voice was lower

He sighed

Him: as you knew I worked at the mines, at first it was the coal mine and things were simple there but later on people were retrenched but my supervisor fought for me or so I thought and I was moved to a gold mine, any that's when things got bad

He ran his hands through his bold head

Him: the supervisor that fought for me one time after work offered to take me home, he came up with a deal, it involved me sneaking out gold from the mine, he knew I know my way around the mine so he led me to an exit for the zamaza (illegal mine workers) at first I had my doubts but like any other human it seemed too easy and besides I would sneak the gold out with no one knowing and I would exit with the carriage used for workers, I would get paid based on

what the gold weighs, they would take their cut and I would get mine, it meant the more gold I snuck out the bigger my cut, so I did exactly that but like most illegal deals it didn't end well, at some point I felt used and I wanted out but it wasn't that easy coz they thought u would sell them out , but that wasn't my plan I just wanted out coz I had acquired enough to build my own legacy, but they were not happy at all and they ended up threatening you guys, o had to distance myself, sometimes I would risk it and come over after a while but I couldn't risk it anymore as they were on my tail 24/7, I had no choice but to go into hiding, I hired some guy to keep an eye on you and I would get feedback on how you guys are and the whole progress on your lives, you must know baby that I had to fix my mess get rid of the threat in our lives so that I can come back for you, but life wasn't waiting on me to fix shit, it continued and you had to go through all that because of me, I will never



forgive myself for that baby never but I'm here now and I'll do all that I can to make it go away and make it stop hurting just a little if you let me

I looked at him

He looked sincere like he meant it

Me: it's not gonna be easy

Him: I know but whatever it takes I wanna make this work please, or do you want me in my knees coz I'll gladly

He said kneeling down

Me: no I don't

He kneels

Him: I apologize Yakha for all the pain you went through in my absence I'm really sorry baby

Me: come on Vusi get up

Him: can I please get the "dad" title again

Me: I don't know

Him: is there hope for it ever coming back

I shrugged

Him: I'll wait, I'm truly sorry my angel I really am

I threw myself in his arms

He seemed taken back for a second but he squeezed me just as tight

And I heard him release a breath

Him: I'm sorry baby

I nodded against his neck

Him: can I properly introduce you to my other family

I nodded

Me: but I wanna go back to school

Him: of course

Me: I'll go back properly next week

Him: I'll arrange your full time drivers

I moved away

Me: I don't want a driver

Him: that not negotiable baby or going back  
could be a problem

Me: I already have an apartment

Him: we'll move your things here

Me: I don't wanna feel like a prisoner

Him: let me earn your trust back baby and allow  
me to get comfortable with the fact that you're  
all grown up then I'll let you be

He had tears dancing on his eyes

Me: allow me to go back, so I can learn to have  
you back in my life again

Him: can you stay a little longer

Me: a week that's it

Him: okay

He stood up and took my hand in his

The other family was in the dining area eating

Lihle: I'll dish up for you guys

She stood up

Vusi: that can wait

He let go of me and walked towards the woman and held her waist

Him: Yakha, this is Lihle my woman, over there is her daughter my step daughter to be clear but she's as good as mine Nkazi and the little guy is Nkosana , fam meet my daughter Liyakha

Lihle: nice to finally meet you

I nodded

Her: I'll dish up

She walked away and I sat on one of the chairs

Nkazi: I've always wanted an older sibling

She smiled

I honestly didn't know what to say, this was suddenly overwhelming, Lihle handed us our plates and I excused myself

Vusi: what's wrong

Me: nothing I just wanna lay down for a while

He nodded

I got to my room and felt like crying, I couldn't really tell but I felt a certain and I wanted to let whatever it is out, I didn't wanna hold it in anymore I'm given another chance at being someone's child again, there's someone who worries about me and my well being besides myself, it feels weird but ok give it a try

[05/27, 08:23] : Insert 28

A few days later

\*\*\*\*\*

It was the day I head back to school, I had

already showered and had breakfast my arranged driver was bringing the car, I haven't had my phone ever since I was "abducted" dad wasn't around since last night he mentioned something about spending the night at Lihle's place apparently they didn't live together for whatever reason, well my phone was said to be smashed during the incident and he was to get me a new one today, which was kind of weird I mean why didn't he give the smashed one and I be the judge of whether I wanna keep it or not, a lot has been happening in my life been trying to adapt to the changes and all, I wanna call Lindo and inform him of the new development in my life but I don't have a phone and besides I don't even know his number by heart, and again he's not even around, Nkululeko( my designated driver) walked in he was probably in his early thirties

Him: the car is ready miss

I nodded and stood up

It was a black Audi A5 with dimmed windows it looked suspicious to me but it could be just a like for dark cars, I had an early class, he drove me to school and dropped me off by the entrance, when I checked the time I still had 30 minutes to kill, I walked to the gate and I noticed I familiar car but brushed it off he couldn't be back he still had a week of games, but when he called out my name I knew it was him, I quickly turned around

He was literally running towards me I met him half way

Me: hi wh...

He just attacked me with a hug

Him: oh my God do you have the slightest of idea how worried I was

Me: I can't breathe Lindo

He loosened his hold and let go

Him: where were you? Did anybody hurt you?  
What happened over the past few day?..

me: whoa slow down I'll tell you everything,  
what are you even doing here

Him: I've been coming here for the past couple  
of days to wait and hope maybe you'll show up  
someday or someone might have information  
on where you are or saw anything that  
happened to you

I chuckled

Me: I'm fine alive and kicking

He hugged me again

Me: you need to stop

He let go

Him: Snow Flake I was worried sick about you,  
your landlord called me a few days ago saying  
you weren't in your apartment she went to give



you a welcome gift but you weren't around, she bought flowers and when she went to check on you in a few days those flowers were still where she left them, when she asked your neighbors no one has seen you or seem to even know you since you're new...

Me: Lindo I'm fine really I'll tell you all about it after my classes

Him: oh..

He seemed disappointed

Me: what??

Him: I just... I don't know I was hoping we could grab breakfast or something, I mean...

Me: I've been missing my classes for a while now

Him: just today please

Me: weren't you suppose to be having games this week

Him: I had to cancel, when your landlord called I freaked out and remember you registered me as your emergency contact so I really couldn't go on, I was gonna be as good as benched coz my mind wasn't gonna be there

Me: yhoo and your coach didn't mind?

Him: well thats a story for another day

Me: don't tell me you risked your career for this

Him: your phone wasn't going through what choice did I have except to come back and search for you, and no, it won't get to that hopefully, can we go get something to eat

Me: okay

He took my hand and led me to his car

Him: can I make breakfast at my place

Me: sure

Me: how's Sonto?

Him: she's okay I guess

Me: you guess?

Him: I haven't had time to see her since I got back and apparently she had a funeral to attend to

I nodded

He drove us to his place

Opened and we walked in

I took water from the fridge and sat on the high stool while he prepared breakfast for us

Him: so?? Where did you go? Don't tell me you have a boyfriend or something

He chuckled

Me: no, I

I sighed

Me: my dad is back

He stopped what he was doing and looked at

me

Him: back???

Me: yep, it's a long story but he's back

I told Lindo the whole story on what happened including the abduction

Him: why abduct you?

I shrugged

Him: but were you comfortable the whole time you were there?

Me: I don't know,

I sighed

Me: I honestly don't know how I felt about being there but it felt weird, I guess it's because I'm not used to having him around or even being around him

He nodded

Him: come breakfast is ready

We sat on the couch and ate

Him: I missed you Snow Flake

Me: ncooa I missed you too

He took the plates to the kitchen and I turned on the TV

He was gone for a while and came back changed into track pants and a vest with socks, okay! You know that saying that leggings are the greatest gift to men? So are these track pants, I don't think he had any underwear underneath coz I saw pretty everything especially when he sat with his one leg bent on the couch

I cleared my throat

Him: are you okay??

Me: yeah, what time is it? The driver is going to fetch me at 15:30

Him: we still got time

Me: I have to be at school before then

Him: I'll take you before then

I nodded we both watched TV in comfortable silence but honestly my eyes kept going back to his package , I was fantasizing about that night we had together I know I promised to stay away but this was temptation on legs

I'm brought back to earth when he cleared his throat, when I looked up his eyes are on mine, I quickly look away

Me: Lindo I have to go

Him: oh

Me: yeah, I can't sit here and not stare and your cock, maybe you should change these pants

Him: I don't want to

I look at him and my eyes involuntary go to his waist, is he getting turned on by this

Him: do I make you that uncomfortable

I nodded

It seemed it turned him on more coz he gets harder

Me: oh my God Lindo we said it was gonna be once

Him: I know

Me: then what's this

I motioned my hand between us

Him: I don't know

He stood up tried to position his hard member and walked away

I released a breath I didn't know I was holding

Soon his back with a single sheet of paper and hands it to me

Him: I got tested those are my results

Me: oh, but I haven't tested yet

He nodded

Me: you're clear of everything it seems

Him: yeah but going back in 6 months again

I nodded

He sat closer this time

Me: this better be the very last time...

I didn't finish coz he attacked my lips with a wet kiss and a moan escaped my lips

The next thing he pulls me on top of him and he's stone hard underneath me

My hands are under his vest running across his muscles and he groans

I can't help but grind my hips against his hardened muscles, he's fumbling with my jean button and I get up and take them off I'm now left in a thong , he pulls me close while I'm still standing with both his hands on my ass and he's sniffing my mound

Him: you smell like fresh flowers



I giggled

Me: do I?

He looks up at me and our eyes lock

Him: fuck! I've missed you

He's up in a second and he gets rid of his clothes and his butt naked I take off my top

I have no bra on

He scoops me up and drag my legs around his waist with his one arm around my waist and we are back to lip locking,

I'm probably dripping that's how wet I am

I release a trembled moan

He grabs his guy and slides it up and down my slippery slit and coats himself with my juices then plunges all the way in, mind you we are still standing his arm tightly wrapped around my waist

He groans from the back of his throat

Him: this right here feels like home

He locks his eyes with mine and smiles lazily

Him: what are you doing to me Snow Flake

I shrugged, he thrusts deep and stays there

Him: are you good?

Me: I would be if you start moving

He walks with him still inside and leans me on the wall, his lips latch on my neck and he moves, good lord this is crazy, it feels like an out of body experience, his lips latch on my nipple with his tongue flicking it over and over, I feel my walls grab him

Him: ahhhh sh\*t Snow Flake

His thrusts quicken and I feel him everywhere

Me: Lindo

That comes out as a breathy moan

Him: huh

Me: gosh this feels good

His fingers are digging on my thighs and his lips are back on mine with his tongue swift moves in my mouth I feel like praising him right now, I sneak mine into his mouth and he gently sucks on it and I feel myself build up to an orgasm my walls keep squeezing him

Him: Snow Flake Stop or I swear I'm gonna cum

I whisper in his ear

Me: I want you to

His thrust get faster and deeper and I feel like all the blood rush to my head, my nails dig into his strong arms and he cuss his release and he takes me with

His body is pressed into mine and his hands are not so tight on me he lets my legs go and both our juices flow down my thighs, we remain

silent in that position for a while with our heavy breathing

His head is buried on my neck and he breaths heavily

Him: are you okay?

His voice vibrates against my neck

Me: yeah

He moves away and looks into my eyes then sighs, he cups my face with both his hands and gently pecks my lips

He takes my hand in his and leads me to the couch, he lay first then pull me on top of him, my head is on his chest and he pulls the throw on the head rest of the couch and lazily throws it over up, we are in comfortable silence until I doze off

[05/27, 08:24] : Insert 29

I wake up to wet kisses all over my face

I giggle

Me: stop

He tickles me

Me: Lindo please stop

Him: wake up, you need to take a shower you smell like my juices

Me: eww that doesn't smell so good

Him: the water is already running

I stand and I feel my cookie tingle

Me: you surely did a number on me

Him: oh come on I'm not that bad

Me: bad? Definitely not

He pecks my lips

I sigh

Me: Lindo what's this

I motion my hand between us

He sighs and sits on the couch

Him: I don't know Snow Flake

I sit back down

Me: let's not label it then

He nods

Him: but I enjoy it, you and everything else

Me: I don't wanna come between you and Sonto

Him: we are just not in a good space

Me: so I'm here for your sexual needs?

Him: Snow Flake..

Me: it's okay, I don't think I want or even ready for a relationship, you enjoy me and I enjoy you and it's fine by me, we just need to talk protection, I'm sure you're not using any with Sonto

Him: actually we are since she refuses to get

tested

Me: refuses?

Him: it's a long story but to cut the story short  
Sonto and I are using protection

Me: that's crazy

He chuckles

Him: how so?

Me: I mean, she's your main and you're using  
condoms with her and not with me

Him: if she's my main then you're my side chick

He wiggles his eyebrows

Me: don't flatter yourself we are not in a  
relationship just here for each other's sexual  
needs then that's it

Him: then what happens when you meet  
someone

Me: it will depend on whether he gives it better

than you

Him: if he doesn't?

Me: then we continue

Him: protection?

I shrug

Him: you're the only one I'm not using protection with at the moment and if you meet someone and you choose not to let me know so that we start using it

I nod

Him: now let me just show

what I can do just for a clear comparison when you meet whoever

He stood up and helped me up leading me to the shower

It is needless to say he surely did plant a permanent comparison in my head, Lindo is a



sex God honestly, or is it because he's \*sort of\* my first?

He took me back to school and at exactly 15:30 dad picked me up which was a surprise coz I thought my driver will

Him: hey Yakha how was your day?

Me: good, yours?

Him: busy

I nod

Him: I bought your phone today it's back at the house

I nod again

I honestly didn't know how to behave around him, it felt weird to have him around, the fact that he had a certain aura about him

He parked in the yard I got off and walked in

There were 3 gentlemen in the lounge, I greet

and head to my room

I changed into my pjs and somehow I still smell like Lindo, I still feel like he's still filling me up which makes my body break into goosebumps, just then I remembered the phone, I have to set it up and get back to social media, even though I don't post much, it's kind of fun watching and reading what other people post, I head down to collect my phone and the gentleman aren't around anymore I hear voices and choose to follow, the door is slightly opened with Vusi on the other side of the table facing this other man in what looks like a study

Man: you need to decide

Vusi: I can't

Man: you know Shane doesn't bluff

Vusi rubs furiously on his head

Vusi: I don't know what to do

He lifts up his head and his eyes land on mine,  
he looks shocked, he quickly stands

Vusi: Yakha, how long have you been standing  
there

Me: I just got here, I'm actually looking for my  
phone

He opens the table drawer and walks towards  
me with a box in hand

Him: there you go

Me: thanx

I walk away and he closes the door behind me

\*\*\*\*\*

A week later

\*\*\*\*\*

I have moved back to my apartment which was  
a bit dusty but had to do, I had Lindos contacts  
and gave him my new ones, he's been texting

more than usual sending me voice notes and shower nudes not showing his package but enough for me to drool, I had just come out from class just chilling by the student center with my headphones on which I've learned are a must to keep others away if you don't want to be bothered, Lindo hasn't texted me yet which was weird considering the fact that it was a few minutes after midday, I've been texting him but he has not responded to any of my texts I even for the first time sent him a nude last night with me looking the other way my ass and lower back was the only thing showing, I was so comfortable with him even the scar on my lower back didn't make me any less confident around him, just when I had given up my phone rang it was him

Me: hey you

Female voice: oh Gosh Liyakha could you please get to Rosebank Netcare hospital it's

Lindo

Me: Sonto?

Her: he was attacked late last night he's badly injured

Me: what do you mean by bad?

My hands were shaking

Her: could you please get here

Me: I'm on my way

I requested taxify and was there in about 30 minutes but it felt like forever

I rushed to the reception and was led to his ward, Sonto was sitting outside with her baby bump clearly showing her feet where swollen

Me: hey, how is he?

Her: he's awake now but he's hurt the doctors are still with him

Me: what happened to him?

Her: I found him last night laying by the passage in the house with a lot of blood on the floor

She sniffed

Me: what did the doctor say?

Her: that he'll be fine he just lost a lot of blood

I nodded looking at her feet

Me: is that normal?

Her: I've been here since last night I hadn't got the time to elevate my feet, the stress could also be the cause

Me: you should go home and rest this is no place for someone in your condition

Her: that's what I was thinking but I couldn't leave him alone, his family is on the way though

My heart almost beat out out of my chest, thinking that ever since I've Lindo I never met any of his family members, it was a bit scary

Sonto: relax they are chilled people

I nodded

Her: do you know any other woman in Lindos life except for me

I shook my head

Me: why do you ask?

Her: I found a nude pic of a woman's behind when I went through his pictures

I swear I almost peed myself

Me: oh, mmmh..

Her: man will always be man, let me get going I need to rest

Me: do you know who it is?

Her: not yet but believe me when I do she'll never look Lindos way at least not in this life time

I swallowed hard

Me: oh

Her: I just need to charge the damn phone there's probably more on his social network, but I don't have an iPhone charger

Me: I do, I can charge it for you and give it to you tomorrow, Lindo has a game this coming weekend his coach is probably calling none stop to no avail, we both know how much he values basketball but if it's charged I can inform them of his state

Her: you're probably right, but please leave it as is some bitch is fucking my man

I nodded

She handed me the phone

That was close,

Her: take my number and keep me posted on his condition

I did just that



Me: go rest he'll be fine

Just a few minutes after she left I was let in to see him

He was bruised, more like bashed, his ribs were bandages with one eye swollen shut and a bump at the back of his head

Me: oh my God what happened, I rushed to him

Him: wood not to fast

I stood right next to his bed

Him: Geez you're the worst, if your face looks like that I can't imagine how I look in the mirror

He giggled but quickly held his ribs

Me: Lindo what happened to you

Him: just bad deeds catching up on me

Me: what's that suppose to mean

Him: nothing to worry about

Me: now I'm really worried

Him: it's nothing serious

Me: you look like that and you say it's nothing serious? Wow

Him: it's nothing, really, but that ass you sent me last night was something

Me: Lindo come on

He sighed

Him: you won't let this go will you?

Me: no, not until I know what happened to you

Him: he'll probably come for you too so might as well tell you

He sighed

Him: it was Logan

Me: which Logan, Mr Logan? My buyer Logan?

Lindo

I held my mouth

Me: oh my God Im So sorry Lindo

Him: I'm okay

Me: no you not, it's all my fault

I started crying

Me: what did he want?

Him: he seemed to have figured out that I'm the one who sent those documents and this was his way to silence me, which I think was totally unnecessary coz I wasn't planning on publishing any of those it was my way to get you out of that mansion

Me: Gosh I'm sorry

Him: he'll probably come for you as well to prove his point so watch your back

Me: oh Lindo I'm...

Him: if you say sorry one more time I swear I could just slip into a coma

I giggled and he did too

Him: your lips on mine could maybe show how sorry you're

I frowned

Me: Sonto saw my pic on your phone

Him: oh

Me: oh?? Really?

Him: I'm just returning the favor

Me: Lindo!

Him: am I getting the kiss or not

I got up and pecked his lips

Him: thank you now I feel better

\*\*\*\*\*

To be continued

\*\*\*\*

Not edited

[05/27, 08:24] : I know, but before you

murder me here it is

Insert 30

I was still sitting with Lindo just chatting about everything and nothing specific, he was on his back on the hospital bed and I was on my side next to him, his idea!! Don't crucify me!. He is amazing I tell you at times I would even forget that he's hurt, now and again he would steal a kiss on my lips, I honestly didn't know what was happening between us, yes I enjoyed it but guilt was forever there at the back of my head because I knew he has a woman in his life but I was also selfish to want him to myself. I know, I know, geez stop with the judgment already ,

Him: penny for your thoughts

He brought me back from my roller coaster thoughts

Me: uhh, it's nothing

Him: come on Snow Flake just say it

I sighed and looked at him

Me: I just....

The door bust open and three people walked in

An old lady, old man and a younger woman

Old lady: oh my God baby what happened to you

He came towards the bed and engulfed him  
with a hug

I felt like I was intruding so I slowly got off the  
bed and stood next to it

Younger woman: hey girl how are you

Me: I'm good

Younger w: little brother what trouble did you  
get yourself into this time

The older man was just a distance from us and  
he just nodded when I looked at him which I

assumed was his way of saying hi

The older woman was busy fussing over Lindo totally ignoring me and I didn't mind coz she was worried about her little boy, she took the chair and sat next to Lindo

Older w: what happened baby

Lindo: mom stop fussing it was just an attempted high jacking

Lindos mom: oh my poor baby I told you to quit all this, this place is not even safe just come home you don't need to work for anyone

Lindo: mah we talked about this

Younger w: Yhoo they surely did a number on you

She chuckled

Lindo: not now Lindiwe please

Lindo looked towards the door and nodded his acknowledgment for the older man

Lindo: what's up pops

Older man: good son

Lindo nodded

This man was closed off for real

Lindo: dad, mom, sis this is Liyakha a really good friend of mine, Snow Flake this is my mom Nompumelelo, Dad Sandile and sis Lindiwe

Me: nice to meet you all

The dad did the nod Lindiwe smiled at me and the mother just gave me a blank stare

Nompumelelo: where's Sonto shouldn't she be here she must be worried sick shame the poor child is even pregnant

Lindo: how do you know she's pregnant?

Lelo: since you were planning on hiding my first grandchild from me she found a way to tell me the great news, I should actually be slapping



you across the face, you know how we do things Lindo, we haven't even paid damages yet she's almost there, your first child will be born out of marriage shouldn't you be concerned about that? That baby needs to have our surname and we should arrange for a meeting with her family

Lindo: you seem to know a lot, since when are you and Sonto best of friends

Lelo: it doesn't matter the poor child was just concerned and didn't like being kept secret especially because she's about to have your baby

I swear to God if she says poor child one more time, just one more time ,

Lindo: mom let's just wait please

Lelo: I'll give you until you're healed after that we are doing right by her your baby should have your surname

Lindo: yes I also want that we can go pay damages but let's wait till the baby comes and besides the surname can be changed after we've paid

Lindiwe was busy on her phone paying no attention whatsoever to the two while the dad was paying attention to the conversation

Lelo: let's just pay lobola once and get this done

Lindo: I don't wanna get married now mother

Lelo: you can't just be impregnating others women's children and claim that you don't wanna get married you should've thought about that the moment you decided not to protect both of you and....

L father: Nompumelelo.

That's a very stern voice.

Lelo just sighed and kept quiet

Lindo nodded towards her dad

What's with the nod??

Lelo: young girl where are you from?

Me: I stay just a few minutes away

She literally just looked at me from head to toe  
and she shook her head

Lindo: don't do that mah

She shook her head

Lelo: does Sonto know she's here

Lindo: mah!

She shook her head again, this was really doing  
a number on my confidence like really

Me: I need to get back to school, it was nice  
meeting you all

Lindo: Snow....

Me: I'll probably come by tomorrow, bye

I quickly walked out

I don't know what I did wrong to lelo, but damn she did some damage especially with the staring up and down then shaking the head, she reminded me that I'm not like everyone else I don't know whether that's a good or bad thing anymore

I requested an Uber to my apartment, when I arrived I charged Lindos phone and got rid of the evidence exchanged between us I only left the picture coz Sonto had already seen it, I took a shower then stuffed myself with pizza and wine before heading to bed, I received a call from an unknown number as I was falling asleep

Me: hello

Lindo: hey Snow Flake

Me: oh hi

Him: are you okay?

Me: I'm fine

Him: I'm sorry about my mom she's.,...

Me: maybe she's right Lindo, I mean you should do right by Sonto, she could be carrying your first child

Lindo: you know what the situation is like right now....

Me: what we are doing is wrong Lindo, you're cheating on your pregnant girlfriend and I don't think I wanna be part of it

Him: Liyakha you know what's going on between Sonto and I

Me: even so, it is still wrong, I'll still be your friend but I can't be sleeping with you anymore, focus on your pregnant woman, what happens when she gives birth to your baby and you were not there for her, Lindo let's stop this

Him: so what do I do with my feelings huh, do I just throw them down the drain and hope they go away?

Me: it was just sex Lindo

Him: wow really? You know I thought men are the ones who to them it's just "sex", well to be it wasn't just sex, I'm sorry for catching feelings

Me: but you knew....

Him: must've slipped my mind , have a good night Liyakha

He hung up

I don't know how I felt after that a lot was troubling my thoughts, but Lindos mom was right he's possibly about to be a father and even if he wasn't his mother will never like me I guess I'm too different for her

[05/27, 08:24] : Thank you so much for the birthday wishes

Insert 31

I'm woken up by a call from Sonto

Me: hello

Her: hey can you make it to Lindos house with the phone I'm on my way the to clean up before he arrives from hospital

Oh wow so he's been discharged and he didn't even tell me? What a friend I've got

Me: he's been discharged?

Her: yeah, mmmh can you make it before noon?

Me: mmh sure but I have a morning class that ends at 10:30 after that I'll be on my way

Her: sure see you then

She hung up

I got up and got busy with the phone I had to get rid of the evidence between the two of us but I had to leave the picture coz Sonto had

already seen it, if I remove it she might suspect something

I got ready for school and left.

I had two classes today and the second one was at 13:20 so I still got time to go and drop off the phone. After my first class I requested an Uber to Lindo a place, when I got there the door was open,

Me: hello, anybody home!!

Sonto: bathroom, I'll be out in a sec make yourself comfortable

I walked to the lounge and made myself comfortable, I took out Lindos phone and placed it on the table, it wasn't long before Sonto walked in, she had a lemonade glass in hand

Her: hey girl, is that it??

She pointed at the phone



Me: yeah fully charged

She took it and sat on the other couch with her legs elevated

Her: how have you been

Me: good just catching up with school work, how are you?

She just continued going through the phone, I felt really uncomfortable, I didn't know whether to get up and leave or remain seated and wait till she's done as I was debating within myself she annoyingly threw the phone next to her on the couch

Her: damn it! Men are sneaky bastards

She took a sip on her drink

Her: I've been good, just this little man is tiring me

She rubbed on her tummy

Me: it's a boy?

Her: yeah, it's a boy, I can't wait to share the news with my man, he always wanted a baby, he'll be over the moon when he finds out it's a mini him

Me: congratulations

I forced a smile, coz honestly even though I don't know what's this between Lindo and I, I somehow wish he was only mine to have and please! Oh my gosh I need to get a grip, I'm beginning to have hore tendencies

It wasn't long when a car drove in

Sonto: they are here

She literally squealed

She got up and walked towards the door

I followed behind her and stood by the door

Lindos dad got out of the car and helped Lindo out and the mother followed behind them, there was no sign of Lindiwe,

I got out and made way for them

Lelo: oh my word it is so nice to finally meet you in person

She was referring to Sonto of course

She gave her a side hug and kissed her cheeks

Sonto: nice to meet you too mah no baba

Lelo: how is my grandchild doing in there

She said gently rubbing on her stomach

Sonto: the grandchild is doing good

Lindo and his dad were making their way in

The dad nodded his acknowledgment of me while Lindo just walked past me totally ignoring me

Lelo also walked past with Sonto on her heels and I was left alone in the veranda

I only walked back in coz I left my bag in there if I didn't I was gonna just leave without saying

anything

Sonto and Ielo were in the lounge

Me: I better get to school have a good day

They just continued talking totally avoiding me, there was no sign of Lindo and his dad so I just walked out.

My day went really slow even my second class felt longer than usual

On my way to my apartment I went past Debonairs to get myself some pizza and soda, it was packed and I wasn't really in a hurry so I ordered and waited while going through my phone, I read the texts exchanged between Lindo and I, and I found myself smiling but then again what happened today tainted the good memories, he just totally walked past me without saying anything but just a blank face, I mean I made it clear that it was just sex, okay maybe I also was a little emotionally attached

to the sex, but we both knew he was in a relationship and he also did say that he has a girlfriend so where did I get it wrong?

I collected my order and walked to my apartment it wasn't that far from Debonairs,

When I walked towards my door I realized that the door was slightly swinging as if not properly shut, which was strange coz I make sure every single time to check if it's locked before i leave, I slowly walked towards my door and kicked it open but remained outside, it didn't seem like there was anyone inside, I tiptoed in and it was a mess, my groceries were spilled on the floor, with cupboards open, water on the sink was running, my pillows were slashed open my couches were slashed, the tv was smashed on the floor, there was a note at the back of my bedroom door that read "lucky day his Yakha, thank your ancestors you could've joined them", what the hell! Now I was a shaking mess, this

wasn't a robbery or break in whoever was here was actually looking for me, his Yakha? Only my dad calls me Yakha! What is going on here, my phone rang bringing me out of my troubled thought

Me: hello

Dad: Yakha where are you

He sounded panicked there was a woman crying on the background

Me: dad.... I'm in my apartment and they ruined everything....

My furn...

Him: get out of there as soon as you can and go to where there's a lot of people do not be alone

I started shaking and tears ran down my cheeks, I felt like my grip couldn't hold the pizza anymore and it dropped to the floor

Me: what's..going...on? Who's crying over ther?

Him: Yakha please I'll explain everything when you get here I've already sent a driver to come get you just find a busy place and send me your location

Me: wh....

Him: there is no time the longer you stay there, the more it puts your life in danger

I hung up and quickly walked out and ran back to Debonairs at least I know for a fact that it was packed whoever wants me won't take me in front of everyone they can't be that brave

I sent my dad the location and it wasn't long when my driver walked in

He walked towards me and I met him halfway, he grabbed my arm a little too tight and walked me outside, as he turned to opened the door for me I realized that he had a gif on his waist, whatever is going on here is really serious

I got in and buckled up then he also got in and

sped off

It was probably 15 minutes later when we drove in my dad's yard, and it usually takes 30-45 minutes to get here depending on traffic, there were probably 6 black SUVs on the driveway, when I got off I heard the piercing cry of a woman coming from the house, I quickly walked in and there she was, my dad's girlfriend on the couch my dad shushing her she was screaming her lungs out, she kept saying they took him, they took my baby

Me: dad...

He quickly got up

Him: Yakha, are you alright

I nodded

Me: wh...what's going on?

Him: sit down

Me: I'd rather stand



The screaming was heart breaking

He sighed and I saw tears in his eyes

Me: Vusi what's going on??

Whatever was going on here was big who took who? And why? What if they found me in my apartment? What the hell did Vusi bring into my life??

[05/27, 08:24] : Insert 32

Vusumuzi is roughly rubbing his hands on his face and I'm standing here waiting for my answer, it is only now that i realize that there's other men in the room, they are about 6 of them all in formal black,

Vusi: Lihle( his woman) take Yakha to the basement I'm gonna go find our son

Me: can somebody explain to me what's going on!

Vusi: I'll be back for that but right now I really have to go

He kiss my forehead and walked out the rest of the men followed

Lihle stood up at least now it was just muffled sobs and no longer the screaming I walked into

Her: come

I followed behind her

We walked towards the basement but I have never seen one with a passcode before, the door was even heavy to open and well the inside didn't look much like a basement either it pretty much looked like my apartment, Lihle shut the door and locked it from the inside by punching in a code, there on the couch sleeping was Nkazi( dad's step daughter)

Lihle: make yourself comfortable we might be here for a while

I took a sit on the high chair

Me: what's going on

She shrugged her shoulders

Me: come on, I know you do know what's happening, you even have the passcodes to this, this looks more like s safe house than a basement, what does Vusi do? Is he involved in dodgy stuff? Who came to my apartment? Why were they looking for me? Who took your son?

She wiped her tears

Her: I think it's better we wait for your father to come back and tell you himself

Me: are you kidding me right now? If I was in that apartment I was gonna be abducted possibly raped and killed and dumped by the side of the road...

Her: when they didn't find you they came for my son, do you have any idea how I feel right now

Me: what?? What do you mean when they didn't find me?

Her: we were at the mall, me nkazi and Nkosana, they didn't want Nkazi or me but him, they went straight for his stroller, we were at the parking lot, my baby screaming his lungs out and I couldn't do anything coz they held a gun to my head and Nkazis, I felt so helpessi just had to stand there and watch them grab him like he's nothing

Me: what do they want?

Her: i don't know, even your dad won't tell me, he just said he'll find him, but the men he works with can't even look me in the eye which makes me assume the worst

Me: so they wanted me?

I was honestly talking to myself

Tears run down my cheeks

But honestly what if I just went straight to my apartment after class then I would've been abducted, by some men who would've probably raped and did as they pleased with me, but it would've been better if it was me I mean I've sinned and did a lot of other things, what did the little boy do? He hasn't even uttered his first words yet.

Lihle: I'm gonna go lay down for a bit, there's food in the cupboard if you're hungry

She takes a sleeping Nkazi on the couch and go to what I assume is a bedroom

I opt for the couch now and just wait for Vusumuzi to come back

I must've fell asleep coz the next thing I'm woken up by voices on the other side of the door when I check the time it's 03:15am

Vusi: keep it down I'll fix this

Man: I told you Shane doesn't bluff, you can't

expect other people to do it but when it's your turn you wanna chicken out

Vusi: sshhh, I said keep it down besides it was years ago I didn't know the deal still stand

Man: dude this wasn't normal contract signing and you knew it

Vusi: if you have nothing else to say then leave my house

I heard the code being punched from the outside then Vusi walked in with this gentleman I once saw in his office

His eyes met mine and he couldn't hold the stare

Him: where's Lihle

Me: sleeping

He sighed

Me: where's Nkosana?

Him: we'll find him, my men are still out there  
loo....

Man: you better come clean about this man coz  
we both....

Vusi: leave my house Charley I'll call you if I  
need you

The man doesn't argue he just turned around  
and walked away

He sits on the other couch facing me and he's  
like a child today he's literally playing with his  
fingers avoiding looking at me and I'm just  
staring at him, after what seems like forever

Me: are you gonna tell me what's going on or  
you're just gonna sit there and act like it's your  
first day at school?

He still doesn't look up

Me: oh my Gosh, you know what this is tiring go  
back to whatever rock you came under and stay

there, I am so done with you, it's been what?  
Just a few weeks since you came back in my  
life and I'm already being targeted for whatever  
you were involved in while I wasn't even around,  
Vusi I'm done, I stand up to leave and he sniffs  
What? Is he crying?

Him: I messed up Yakha, I really messed up

Me: just say it, what exactly is going on here?

Lihle walks in

Her: I also wanna know coz it doesn't seem like  
the story you told me adds up, why would they  
take Nkosana and leave the rest of us  
unharmd, this is not about some work deal  
gone wrong and I wanna know who took my  
son

He wipes his cheeks still looking down

Him: please sit both of you

I sit on the armrest and Lihle also takes a seat



Him: I didn't know it would get to this, at first I thought they were bluffing coz it's been so long and I even lost contact with them but they managed to find me

Me: you're speaking in riddles, who found you? bluffing about what? Can you just get to the point

He looks up at me and I see a broken man, but no he needs to cough it out coz by the look of things our lives are in danger

Him: it was a long time ago, after I left the mines, I was looking for protection after the whole mine deal went wrong, I met Rajesh an Indian guy who offered to help and him and his guys helped me out, I had to tell them what was going on and that's when they discovered that I had a lot of illegal money and gold that needed to be cleaned up, I was desperate I needed protection and they offered their help only on one condition that I...

He cleared his throat

Me: what?

Him: that I join their cult coz it was recruiting season for them

Lihle held her mouth in shock and my jaw was literally on the floor

Him: I won't get into details about it coz I'm not suppose to share that information but it wasn't a nice thing to go through but it had to be done

Me: you killed people?

Him: no it wasn't my turn yet, but I had to take part in the rituals and do what's expected of me, there's a lot of us and it takes s while for the rituals to take place and sacrifices to be offered

Lihle: oh no no no, not my baby Vusi, please not Nkosana

She was crying

Vusi: I ran away from that after the people that

wanted me dead where taken care off and I left a huge sum of money hoping it would wipe of my debt and I thought that was the end of it until yesterday, I don't know how they found me but they did and they took

His voice breaks

Him: they took my son

Me: oh my God.... the...they were gonna take me.... Vusi they were gonna take me

Lihle: I want my son Vusumuzi

He just looked down

Lihle got up and kept punching him on his back crying her lungs out

Lihle: I want.... my... son....go get my son

She was a crying mess and so was I, so now we have to pay for our fathers sin?

Lihle: I swear if you don't get him home when the sun rises I am done with this I will hate you

for the rest of my life, if anything happens to Nkosana I swear to God I will kill you

He didn't say anything he just sat there Lihle ran off to the bedroom

Me: why didn't they take Thato? Why me and Nkosana? Is it because we have albinism?

He just looked at the floor

Me: you better answer my question Vusi

Him: I don't know, they probably don't know about him or they do but they saw that you both have albinism which was a bonus for them

Me: will this ever end? What happens when it's your turn again? They'll come for me? When will people learn that we're also human just like them? The blood that runs in my body is as red as theirs? I don't have yellow blood and I'm tired of being treated like some animal that needs to be slaughtered in the name of power!

Him: it won't happen if I'm dead, if I die before my turn then they won't come for you

Me: Why couldn't you die before they took Nkosana? He's just a baby he haven't even gotten the time to experience the world and now he's dying for your sins?

I was a mess snorts and all

Me: I hate you Vusi, I hate you so much it hurts  
I stood up and walked away

What kind of animal does that, he's much of an animal as they are, he witnessed other people being killed and took part in all that, he's a monster, as far as i know he's dead to me

[05/27, 08:25] : Insert 33

Three weeks later

I walked out of Vusi's house that day and never looked back, he tried to reach out to me but I am just not interested in being in a ritualist life, for all I know I am next for sacrifice and by the look of things there's nothing I can do about it but wait, I've been attending school just ok even though I feel like someone is tailing me at time, but I know it's one of Vusi's man coz if it wasn't they would've done something already, I managed to get my license and buy myself a second hand car coz I wasn't perfect yet with driving so I wanted to dent and scratch it trying to get used to driving than buy a brand new car when I'm perfect at driving, I wanted to celebrate with someone when I got it but it's unfortunate that Lindo and I are still not talking, I've tried calling him a number of times but he just flat out rejects my calls, it's sad really coz I realize that I'm actually alone, maybe I should stop with the headphones at school and try making friends what woman my age doesn't

have at least one close person to talk to and spend time with? Maybe a boyfriend isn't such a bad idea, as long as he'll understand that I'm a student and actually give me time to study and all I'll be fine, maybe I should also put in a little effort in how I look coz lately I've just been hiding behind sweatshirts and track pants who on earth would notice me?

It's Saturday morning anyways and a little shopping will do me good, my golden afro has grown now and it needs a little grooming, I'm not a fan of extensions so I'll just wash it and maybe give it a little color, eyebrow trimming doesn't sound bad either and maybe a little color for my nails. I get off my bed and clean up real quick it's not sparkling clean but I'm satisfied with it, I take a shower and cash from my safe and I'm off to shopping. It's not as fun doing it by myself but hey I'm a loner, I'm actually undecided on what to buy so I settle

mostly for short and long jumpsuits a few jeans and t-shirts with sneakers and I also buy underwear, it would've helped if I had a stylish friend coz I honestly don't have a single fashion bone in me, I later on go for grooming myself, I start of with my nails I just put on nail polish on both hands and feet coz I've got nice nails already, at least I think I do. Then I do my eyebrows and hair which I'm satisfied with, the lady doing my eyebrows says waxing is on the house and I go for it and believe me when I say I'm not doing that shit again, the hairstylist puts on some color and insists on doing Bantu knots on me and I must say I look fresh. I head back to my apartment feeling like a brand new woman, I take yet another shower and put on my thong, denim shorts with white t-shirt didn't need a bra and sneakers I spray on my perfume, there and there I decide to confront Lindo about this whole thing coz I honestly can't take the silent treatment anymore. I look myself in the



mirror and I must say I'm pleased with myself. I get in my car but firstly I go buy him his favorite wine and pizza just a little peace offering before heading to his place.

I get there and drive in, I knock once and let myself in. He's on the couch playing video games, he doesn't look as bad as the last time I saw him, he looks up at me and goes back to his game. I kick my shoes off and join him with my feet up on the couch placing the pizza and wine on the coffee table.

Me: hi

He just ignores me and continues with the game

I take the remote on the table and switch off the tv and I swear if looks could kill I'll be dead by now

Me: hey

He placed the joystick on the table

Him: what do you want?

I sigh coz this is gonna be harder than I thought

Me: nothing I just missed my friend

He chuckles

Him: your friend huh?

Me: Lindo please, can we just go back to the way we were? Okay, I agree I was maybe a little insensitive but I miss you as my friend

Him: only as your friend?

Me: maybe a little on the sex part

Him: I've been going through a lot on the past few weeks and at times I wished you were here with me like I was there for you

Me: I'm sorry, I also wanted to be here but I was tired of your moms nasty comments and besides you hate me

Him: I could never hate you and you know that

Me: you reject my calls and....

Him: I just wanted you to come over and damn it took so damn long

Me: I'm sorry Lindo, for everything, not being there for you, and for being such a bad friend

Him: you're such a bad friend

We both chuckled

Me: I know, I know... truce?

Him: we'll get there

I punched his shoulder

Him: careful I'm still bruised

Me: you're such a sissy, damn dude you can whine

Him: whatever, I heard a car driving in

Me: yeah bought a second hand

Him: really?

Me: yeah just for now

Him: congrats Snow Flake

He squeezed my cheek

Me: stop it

Him: im proud of you

Me: thanks

Him: what do you have here

Me: your favorite whine and pizza

Him: you might just be forgiven

He grabbed the box and I went to get the glasses, we talked and got a few things out our chests and we were down to our second glasses of whine

Him: I missed you Snow Flake

Me: I missed you too

Him: I also missed being with you

Me: I'm right here

Him: not like this

Me: like what?

Him: like this

He slowly leaned towards me and damn I also haven't had some in a while, I met him half way and we were all over each other in seconds, could also be the wine, he swiftly took off my t-shirt and unbuttoned my shorts, he took them off and stood up and just stared at me, I literally squirm just by him looking at me

Him: you're beautiful Snow Flake

I pulled him down with his vest and our lips met  
The kiss was mind blowing, the taste of wine on his tongue just had me dripping.

Him: let's take this to the bedroom

Mind you he was still fully dressed, his manhood poking through his track-pants

I stood up and he kneeled and took of my thong sniffing you nookie in the process

He took my hand and led me to his bedroom

I sat at the edge of the bed and watch him take off his clothes

He walked towards me and pushed me back getting on top of me, the lip locking was now on another level, his lips were everywhere I needed them, from the soft spot just below my ear, to my neck, on my nipples to my belly button in between my legs, oh my word, I felt like praising him, I dragged him to my lips and locked my legs around his waist, I wanted him in me as in yesterday but he was just staring at me, I took him in my hand and he had this intense look on his face, I held his manhood and led it to my entrance and he stills

Him: let me get a condom

Me: oh

He get up and walks to the drawer

At the back of my head I'm thinking he slept with someone without a condom already, I mean since when do we use condoms? But I just brush it off it's not like he's my man anyways

He's sliding it on as he walks to me and he climbs on top of me and is in me within a second,

Him: aahhh fuck

I don't know why but I was totally distracted throughout the whole thing I only came to when he was done and pulling out of me

Him: are you okay?

Me: yeah I'm good

Him: I know you Snow Flake, talk to me

Me: since when do we use condoms?

He cleared his throat then cuddled me from the

back

Him: coz I slept with someone else without it

Me: who?

His phone rang on the headstand

He let go of me and answers

Him: hello

Caller:.....

Him: what? Right now?? Okay I'll be there in 30 minutes

I get up wipe myself and get dressed while he's still on the phone coz by the sound of it he has to be there in 30 minutes there's no time for a shower I just need to get out of here coz my heart is just heavy as is

Him: Sonto went into labour I need to be at the hospital

Me: it's okay I'll get going



Him: please come with me

Me: Lindo I....

Him: you were not there for the past few weeks and I need you now

Me: this is emotional blackmail on steroids fine I'll come

He quickly got dressed and I drove behind him to the hospital, in exactly 30 minutes we got there

The receptionist led us just outside delivery ward and we sat on the benches, Lindo was tapping his foot

Me: nervous?

Him: just a little

Me: she'll be fine just relax

Him: I hope so

It was 3 hours later when the doctors wheeled

out a baby to the nursery and a exhausted looking Sonto to another ward

Lindo quickly stood up

Him: nurse are they okay?

Nurse: and you're?

Him: I'm the dad

Is he now?? Wow!

Nurse: yes they are both fine, the mother is just tired and the baby is as healthy as a horse

Him: can I see him

Nurse: give us a few minutes just to check everything then you can see him

He nodded and sat back next to me

It was just silent for a few minutes until the nurse came to call him to the nursery

He took my hand and I stood up

Nurse: only the father is allowed in you can

stand just outside the glass wall, you'll be able to see them I nodded

Lindo walked in and I watched from outside

The nurse showed him how to hold the baby and he just stared at him, I knew there and then that it was his, he looked at me with teary eyes and I mouthed congratulations,

Him: thank you

I waited a few minutes then left, he was too consumed with the little one, it was truly beautiful to watch,

It was already a few minutes past 6 and I didn't feel like going to my apartment so for the very first time in my life I decided to drive to a club downtown

I walked towards the entrance and there were bouncers at the door, when I tried to enter one blocked the door

Me: I'm way older than 18

He looked at my shoes

Me: what about my shoes?

He shook his head

Oh my so he has a problem with my sneakers I tried to push past him and he just lifted me up like I weigh nothing and put me on the ground then pointed at the rules, which clearly stated "no flats allowed", I sighed defeated

Until someone behind me spoke

Guy: she's with me

The bouncer nodded and made way , the unknown guy walked behind me

I made my way to the bar and he made his way to the VIP section totally ignoring me

I orders 3 shots and one cocktail

I took all the shots at the same time then just

chilled alone at the bar.

I was down to my fourth cocktail and I felt like my head was spinning, particular by Natsy C came on and I went crazy, I was on the dance floor dancing my butt off, don't ask me where I got the moves it just came naturally, by the time the song ended instead of feeling exhausted I felt refreshed

I head back to the bar to finish my drink, and it has been one drink after another and now I was beyond wasted on I requested the DJ to play particular one last time before I leave, and by this time a lot of people were tired it was a few of us on the dance floor until someone held my waist, it was a 'he' I could tell by the masculine smell that engulfed my senses

He was dancing slowly with me and grinding on me and I couldn't help but grind back and I knew when he groaned that he was getting turned on, when the song ended I turned around

and it was the “unknown guy”, he looked cute up close, a dark, tall guy with pink wet looking lower lip, he licked them and I swear I had a mini orgasm

Him: hi

Gosh his breath smelled of litchi and I just wanted to soak in his scent

Me: hey

Him: you need to get home

Me: take me home

He smiled at me and I couldn't help but smile back

Him: where's home?

Me: Your place, my place doesn't matter really

Him: you're really out of it

Me: I'm just having fun

I tried to walk away from his grip and I stumbled

to my knees, and I laughed

He picked me up and held me by my waist and led me out

Me: my bill

Him: it's settled

He walked with me outside

Him: where's your car

I pointed to my car

Him: keys?

I giggled and shrugged

He cursed under his breath then took out his phone and called someone, I just heard him saying something about "keep your distance and I'll call you"

He led me to his car

Him: where to?

I told him my address and he punched it in his

GPS, the next thing I'm being lifted out his car

Him: number?

Me: 39

He led me to my door

Him: keys?

Me: pocket

He went through my denim pocket and fished it out

He opened and led me to my bedroom, he took off my shoes and placed my under the covers as he tried to get up I pulled him by the collar of his shirt and place my hands on either side of his face and kissed him

I mumbled as we kissed

Me: you smell nice

He held both my wrist and removed them from him



Him: sleep you're drunk

Me: with the itch between my legs I don't think I can

He cursed under his breath

I pull him to me again and lock him with my legs

And I kiss him and bite his bottom lip he groans like a wounded cuff, I loosen his tie and unbutton his shirt, he smells so expensive it's actually making me dizzy, by the time I reach his last button he's the one hungrily kissing me, my t-shirt is pulled off and he's lips are latching on my hardened nipples, my shorts soon follow and I'm only left with my lousy thong, he literally takes it off with his teeth and by now I'm literally dripping, he sniffs my mound and I squirm

He bites the sides of my thighs and I release a trembling breath

He licks his index finger and slowly rubs on my

engorged clit and my lower back shoots off the bed

He smiles and looks up at me.

The first contact of his tongue on my wet area I literally roll my eyes as I reach the most intense orgasm of my life and its lights out almost immediately.

\*700 likes, 50 comments and 50 shares still the target\*

[05/27, 08:25] : Insert 34

I attempt to lift my head for the third time now and I must say I feel like I've jumped off a cliff and hit the ground head first, I lower my head again and just give up until someone giggles, I look towards the door and the sex on legs dude is leaning on the door frame, he has a glass of

water in hand, my head feels heavy and I'm involuntarily shaking

Him: rough night?

Me: you have no idea

He walks towards me and sits at my middle

Him: sit up so you can take these

He has two pills in his palm

Me: I've been trying that for the past 30 minutes or so

He place the glass of water and pills on my headstand

Him: let me help

He firstly piles up the pillows behind me then he gently lifts me up by my waist and position me in a sitting position leaning on the piled up pillows

Me: thank you

He nods and gives me the pills to take with the water

Him: now take a nap you're gonna need the energy

The way he says "energy" has me feeling a type of way, immediately touch my privates, I mean did we?? But I don't remember anything after my orgasm

He gives me a wide smile and that's when I notice his one dimpled cheek

Him: you passed out on me last night and I had to take care of myself how rude, besides I don't think we would have gone all the way you were too drunk I want you sober

I can't help but feel embarrassed and I feel my cheeks heating up and

He just gives me a lazy smile then leaves me

I think one of the pills is for sleep inducement

coz I feel really sleepy. I feel my eye lids get heavy and I'm out again

\*\*\*\*\*

Hours later I wake up and he has my towel wrapped around his waist and he's dripping wet

Gosh this guy is perfection, from his head all the way to his toes, the happy trail leading to his....

he clears his throat and I sit up

I feel 10 times better actually

Him: better?

I nod

Him: i had to used your shower I hope you don't mind

I shake my head

All of a sudden I'm a shy mess, I can't even look at him, I mean I e heard of people having one

night stands I just didn't think it was this awkward afterwards, and we didn't even go all the way, I could also use a shower right now

I get up and I only have my pajama top on and it doesn't cover much, in fact it covers just my upper body, the dude is just standing there watching and I feel totally exposed to him I slide back in bed

He walks towards me and removes the towel from his waist and hands it to me, he's butt naked in front of me and he doesn't seem fazed about it

Him: I'm sure you also wanna shower

I nod

He walks away and I can't help but look at his firm butt

I wrap the towel around my waist and go take a shower

I am probably half way through my shower when he opens the shower door and walk in

It's steamy in here so I don't really mind coz I don't think I'm that exposed to him

He gently pushes me against the wall and switches off the taps

He has caged me with his hands on either side of my head, he's taller than me, and strong, he totally takes gym seriously

I can't help but look up at him and gosh those lips, THOSE LIPS!! Gosh is it legal to drool over a naked stranger in my shower

He drops his head and captures my lips in his and I swear I loose balance coz he quickly grabs my waist and just stare at me the chemistry between us is insane or is it just sexual tension? it is just the shower fog covering us and he's dripping wet, Good Lord my senses are on over load. He lowers his head

again and when his lips contact my I release a trembling breath and that seems to cheer him on coz he goes on full on kissing mode, his hand move from caging me and his big palms grab my ass,

He picks me up like I weigh nothing and my arms wrap around his neck, he swings my legs around his waist and the way he's looking at me now with those twinkling eyes I know for sure he's a beast in bed.

He grabs his manhood and at first he rubs himself on me going from my cl\*t all the way to my opening my juices coating his head, he does this to a point where I almost feel like begging him to enter me, he keeps the eye contact with me and I honestly feel like I'm under his spell, I'm a trembling mess and he's teasing me none stop

Me: do you want me to beg?



He gives me that lazy smile showing off his perfect white teeth

Him: no

He's voice got deeper now and I know he wants this as much as I do

Me: then please

Him: please what?

Me: make love to me

Gosh he hasn't stopped rubbing his manhood on me and I feel like crying and cursing him out and begging him all at the same time

Him: I don't know you like that to make love to you, right now I just wanna fuck you

I look at him for a while studying his face

Me: then do it

He rubs on me with urgency once all the way to my cl\*t when he goes back to my opening he

plunges all the way in and I don't know whether to stop breathing and live or die all at once, he's surely bigger than anyone I've been with and I think he knows coz he's smiling at me with approval, he stays there and he's one hand removes a strand of hair from my forehead, he grabs on my ass a little too tight this time and thrust into me, this feels magical, where has he been all my life? By the time he thrust into me the 5th time I'm going crazy I'm almost at my pinnacle, my walls pulsate around him and he releases a string of curses and true to his word he fucks me long and hard, I reach my nirvana and I can't help but sink my teeth into his shoulder and he goes fast, my arms can't seem to hold anymore and I'm suddenly weak, he quickly pulls out of me

Him: hey are you okay?

I can sense the panic in his voice

My feet drop to the ground and my legs

suddenly can't balance my weight both he's hands hold my tiny waist

Me: yeah I'm good

Him: am I too much for you?

Me: just a little but we can go on I'm fine

He shakes his head

Me: you didn't even... mhhh

Him: I'll be fine

No he wasn't gonna be fine, he was still stone hard and I could tell he still wanted to go on but for whatever reason something was holding him back

He drizzled shampoo all over my hair and I washed it off

I then washed myself and he just rinsed off and left me in the shower, I finished up and he's drying himself when I enter my bedroom, I feel satiated, I mean is it possible for a stranger to

just know every sexual button to push? I just feel like resting a bit, I climb on my bed and just lay on my tummy, he has his boxers on and he climbs just next to me, he unties my robe and reveals only the side with my birth marks

Him: I love this

He rubs his fingers across it

Him: I've never seen one so big it's amazing it compliments you

I turn and look at him

His eyes are just glued on it

Me: thank you

His fingers are like a sweet lullaby and I fall into a deep sleep, when I wake up he's already dressed speaking to someone on the phone, I put on my gown and he turns and looks at me, he told the person on the other end that he's on his way

Me: can I make you brunch?

Him: thank you but I have to go

I nodded

Him: are you okay?

Me: I'm fine

Him: I'm...

His phone rang again and he answered

He mouthed "bye" to me before he left, I didn't even get his name, oh my word what am I turning into?

I go and rinse off my face when I look up in the mirror I can't help but touch my lips and imagine his on mine, gosh the way he kissed me! The way he thrust into me, the way he held me, good God this was amazing I wouldn't mind doing him again, Gosh calm down  
Liyakha!!

\*\*\*\*\*

At least 700 likes, 50 shares and 50 comments

[05/27, 08:25] : The target still stands!!!

Just felt like spoiling you guys.

Insert 35

One month later

Life has been.... well I don't know, one moment I'm ok then the next I'm frustrated with Mr "good sex then I vanish on the face of the earth", yes he's exactly that!! I don't miss him no, I just miss the sex, he never contacted me, it's not like I gave him my number but as a man he is suppose to make an effort, or maybe not since he already had the cookie! Arg whatever it's not like I personally know him, but it doesn't

take away from the fact that I know his dick ,  
oh my word I'm ratchet! I'm snapped back into  
reality when other students start packing their  
stuff, I didn't even pay attention. This dude  
should just stay wherever he is coz is just a  
distraction with his good....

A call from Lindo came through

Me: hey

Him: hey, are you mad at me?

Am I? I don't know, I just feel disappointed  
somehow and sad

Me: no why do you ask

Him: I had zero calls or texts from you in like a  
month so I'm kind of worried

Me: I'm fine I've been busy

Him: is it?

Me: yes Lindo

Him: don't be like that Snow Flake

Me: like what?

Him: can we meet and talk I just miss my friend

Me: I just finished with a hectic class Lindo I wanna go to my apartment and have a good well deserved sleep

Him: ok now I know for sure you're mad at me, so here's the deal it's either you gonna come over or I'm gonna disrupt your well deserved sleep how's that?

Me: you're an annoying friend do you know that

Him: I love you too, see you in thirty when you get here

Geez why on earth did I make such a friend

I get in my car and drive to his place, I park in the driveway and walk in

He's on the couch and there's baby stuff everywhere



Me: hell no I ain't having a baby any time soon

Him: hey you, I'm good thanks for asking I've missed you too

I roll my eyes and he giggles

He gets off the couch to give me a hug and he squeezes me

Me: I can't breathe

Him: serves you right since you just abandoned me

He led me to the couch

Me: I didn't know you had a baby around

He cleared his throat

Him: he's always around

Me: like he stays with you?

Him: no they stay with me him and his mom

Me: oh, I didn't know that

I was damn right disappointed, I mean I don't know why or do I? But it just didn't sit well with me

Him: I'm sorry I know I should have told you, but you just disappeared on me and I was also caught up in raising the little man

Me: it's okay it would've been nice though to know it coming from you instead of just walking into it

Him: I'm sorry Snow Flake

Me: it's ok, how long have they been here

Him: they moved here the day they left the hospital, mom suggested it and I also think it's the right thing

Me: mmmhh where are they now

Him: gone out to get a few things

I nod

Him: I'm s....

Me: if you say sorry one more time I might just strangle you

He giggles

Me: how's the little man

His face lights up

Him: he's amazing let me get my phone so you can see

He almost sprints to the bedroom

I get up and just tidy up just a little, Lindo is a neat freak I sometimes thought he had OCD and I've never seen his house this untidy before

He gets back

Him: come see

I sit next to him

Him: these were taken at the hospital

He goes on and on showing me the little guy, he has Lindos hands and eyes the rest I think he

took after Sonto, he's a cute baby, but I mean which baby isn't.

Me: I'm really happy for you

Him: thank you

Me: what's his name?

Him: Lindokuhle Junior (LJ)

Me: oh my God you just had to!! Shame poor baby

He jokingly punches my arm

I continue looking through the pictures until he just stares at me, I try to focus on the pictures but I can't anymore he's eyes are almost piercing through my skin

Me: what?

Him: I don't know what I'm doing Snow Flake, my heart says one thing and my mind says another

Me: which one makes sense to you

Him: my mind

Me: then follow it

Him: I don't know...

Me: Lindo it's just not you alone anymore there's another little human that depends on you that's needs you, you can't base your decisions and choices on what will only benefit only you

Him: I know that, I guess heart desires will have to wait for probably an after life when things are different

Me: I suppose

Him: enough about me, what have you been up to

Me: nothing much just trying to locate a mystery guy

Him: what? Your secret admire? Crush or

something

Me: I don't know, we just had an encounter at some club and he took me home

Him: you at a club?

Me: first and last time believe me, I was so out of it I almost had a one night stand or was it a one night stand I don't know how these things work

Him: what happened

I retell the entire events to him

Him: oh

He seemed disappointed

Me: no no, you don't get to feel that way you're the one who has a baby not me

Him: I just, you know what it doesn't matter, so what's his name

Me: I don't know

He giggles

Him: come on I won't google him or anything

Me: I really don't know

Him: what? You're kidding right m?

Me: no

He bursts out and laughs at me

Me: stop it

He quietens down a bit then laughs until he has tears in his eyes

Me: know what fuck you

I get up to leave and he grabs my arm

Him: ok ok I'll stop, it just that I never thought you would go all the way with someone you don't even know

Me: don't judge me

Him: I'm not judging you it's just funny how it frustrates you so much

Me: you don't get it I'm a woman and you're a man to you it might mean nothing but to me it's different at least I wanna know if I'm memorable

Him: take my word you're

Me: then why doesn't he make an effort to contact me it's not like he doesn't know where I stay

He shrugged

I sighed

Me: man are just complicated creatures

Him: at times yes

Me: let me get going before the madam gets here and besides I need to study for my exams

Him: don't be a stranger please

Me: I won't

He walked me out and I drove straight to my



apartment, when I got there Vusi was pacing outside my door

Me: oh Good Lord, Vusi what do you want?

Him: Yakha, I'm so glad to see you

Me: can't say the same

I opened my door and he walked in with me

Him: I heard you're seeing someone

Me: are you serious right now?

He sighed

Him: I just wanna make sure you're okay

Me: oh please cut the bull, your guys have been on my tail since I left your house so stop pretending

Him: it's for your own good

Me: since when do you care about that? You've watched me get raped, sold myself and suffer now all of a sudden you're concerned about my

own good? Leave Vusi!

Him: I...

Me: I've got exams in exactly 3 weeks from now  
I need to study

Him: ok, please let me know if you need  
anything

He walked out and closed the door.

Later that day I cooked just after studying then  
took a shower and watched Tv. It was a few  
minutes past 10pm when I went to bed, I  
stripped naked coz it was hot then I only used  
the sheet as a cover,

I was in deep sleep when I felt someone getting  
in bed behind me, I almost jumped off when he  
spoke

Him: hey it's me

I knew the masculine scent I could take it out of  
a thousand other scents, I tried to turn and look

at him and he held me tight, by the feel of him I knew he only had his boxers on

Him: you should learn to always lock your door

I thought I did! No like really I think I remember locking just before coming to bed. Or was I dreaming?

Me: you disappeared on me

Him: just like you passed out on me

I couldn't help but blush

Him: let's sleep I'm tired

His breath was blowing on my neck

He spooned me much closer, within a few minutes he was snoring, that's when I turned and looked at him, I don't wanna lie I'm tempted to just kiss the disappearing act out of him, damn some men are beautifully created

He has a light snore and those bushy eyebrows, I cant help but stare at him until I fall asleep.

The following morning I woke up to an empty bed. And there's no sign that he was here, the sheet next to me isn't creased, it doesn't even smell like him, was I dreaming?

I go and check my door and it's locked. what the hell??

[05/27, 08:25] : Insert 36

It had been 3 days after the dream or whatever that was and I haven't been sleeping much coz I wanted to make sure he finds me awake this time if it was really him, coz deep down I felt like he was really here, a dream wouldn't feel so real, I mean he touched me and I saw him and touched him back. Sigh! it's study week for me which means no school so I've been studying, not as effective as I would like but hey I can't just erase whatever happened 3 days ago, I know for a fact I wasn't high or drunk so

something is happening and I'll get to the bottom of it. I got of bed and it was a few minutes past 12 decided to just clean my apartment, I would do the practicing of drawings and familiarizing myself with the terms later, I started with my kitchen coz the dishes were already piling up by the time I got to my bedroom I just felt like swiping and tidying up it wasn't dirty just messy, I think there's a difference between the two † ♀ ,when I swept under my bed I found a shirt button but it only confused me more coz I don't know whether it came off the first time he was here or the last time I thought he was here, I sighed and just continued with what I was doing.

I was running low on groceries and I had to go to the mall i couldn't survive on Kellogg's anymore. I put on my shorts they weren't that short they revealed a little of my birth mark with a baggy top and sneakers and I was off to the

mall, when I got there I also saw it fit to just have blonde long braids and have my nails polished, I also just decided to wax that pubic hair you know just to be prepared for Mr “ I show up anytime”, just the thought of him really frustrates me, I mean what are we? Are we sex partners? But the last time I thought he came he didn't want to at least if we did the deed I would have physical evidence that he was here I mean who wouldn't tell that he had entered the gates of zamuda, his size would just sell him off, but again are we friends with benefits? But I would know my friends name wouldn't I? And we are definitely not dating? You see with us ladies we need titles so that we can know our place in ones life, if a guy says we are just fuck buddies then we know where we stand with the guy, titles are very important people, VERY IMPORTANT!! I come to when this lady pulls off the wax strip and I feel like cursing her out, remind me why I'm doing this again? I then go

for grocery shopping, I pretty much needed everything so I just decided to buy it all, from cleaning products to hygiene and food of course. I went past the baby store and bought LJ a few things, my mom always said when you go see a baby for the first time you must bring it something new packed everything in my boot then drove back to my apartment. When I got there it was 17:45, I decided to cook a full meal haven't had that in a while and I played the music channel, I just decided to cook roasted chicken with roasted potatoes and I made bacon avo and feta salad, well yeah I know it's not so full meal but I think I'm putting on a few kg's and I read on some blog that it's better to roast than fry so here I am doing the best I can to just roast. I finished cooking at 20:00 I dished up for myself and sat on the couch, while I was eating I browsed through the drawings, yes It wasn't practicing but I was exhausted, I then

scanned through the jargon and put away my books. I got up and ensured my door was locked then I went back to the couch and watched a bit of Tv and I was out like a light. I slowly opened my eyes from a heavy sleep when I felt someone lifting me up, at first I thought I was floating in a dream but no I was in his arms, it is raining cats and dogs outside with thunder and lightning and I think there's no power, he's naked and I'm still in my clothes coz I didn't know I would fall asleep on the couch

I open my eyes and look at him and he looks ahead

Him: stop staring

Me: put me down

He continues to walk to what I'm assuming is my bedroom

Me: I said put me....

He drops me on my bed and I'm pissed he can't



just come and go as he pleases, this is my damn apartment! He can't just show up with his sexy naked.... no no that's not the point! Who the hell does he think he is?

Right now he's standing a meter away and just staring at me, he's only wearing his boxers and socks and they look a bit wet, it serves him right, this lightning should've struck him down as well busy sneaking around at night, how the hell did he get into my apartment?

Him: are you done debating with yourself?

No!! He doesn't get to ask me shit I'm the one with the questions, he is so calm it is actually frustrating, everything about him just frustrates me, well not entirely everything, his d...no! this guy owes me an explanation, I get up and go through my closet there's a flashlight that I found when I moved in, it's dark and that would only confuse me more when I wake up in the morning so I take it and shine it at him and he

covers his eyes with the back of his hand

Him: could you light it anywhere except my face

Me: you don't get to tell me what to do, how the hell did you get into my apartment!!

Him: stop yelling I can hear you just fine

He is so calm about this whole thing I actually wanna strangle him

Me: do you know I can call the cops and tell them you broke in!!

Him: there's no sign of forced entry, and again please stop yelling and switch off the flashlight

Me: YOU DO NOT GET TO TELL ME TO STOP YELLING IN MY OWN...

I didn't even finish my sentence coz he literally attacked me with a kiss, I a kiss attack! Yes it was an attack and it went straight to my lady parts, no Liyakha you don't get to feel that not until he explains himself, I try to push him back

but he just pushes me on my back and I fall on the bed, he grabs both my wrists in his 1 hand and he puts his other hand under my top and he comes in contact with my hardened nipples and I moan out loud, could somebody just shoot me right now!!

He stops and gets off me, I sit up and try to compose myself and my breathing is betraying me, the power comes on and i turn off the flashlight

Him: better now?

Me: you didn't answer my question

Okay I'm a lot calmer now, who on earth is this guy? And what is he doing to me?

Him: I honestly didn't get the question from all the yelling

Me: are you a ghost?

He literally laughs at me, damn his laugh is sexy

or is it that dimples cheek of his

Him: no I'm not a ghost

Me: ok then how did you get in? Who are you?  
What do you want? What are we doing? Why are  
you always sneaking around? Why do you come  
over at night?

Him: whoa one question at a time, but before  
that can I take a shower I'm wet

Me: you know your way around

He leaves me more puzzled and horny AF

I decide to make both of us hot chocolate for  
me because I don't wanna fall asleep I wanna  
make sure he's real and him because he  
mentioned he's wet and probably cold

He comes out in my towel around his waist and  
I get a fleece for him to cover up, for one  
because I don't want any distractions I need  
answers

Him: can we go to bed?

Me: no I...

Him: I'm cold, relax I won't do anything to you

I sigh and hand him his cup

He gets in the covers and I just sit on top

Me: and??

Him: and what??

Gosh now I'm beyond frustrated

He giggled

Him: okay before you murder me, let's get something straight I'm a Zulu man and I do not care how pissed you are at me I will not tolerate being yelled at like a little boy is that understood?

I nod, but wait why is he putting me in my place I should be the one who does that to him, but the seriousness in his tone will humble anyone

Him: I'm here because I wanna be here and I enjoy being with you even though it might...

He sighs

Him: what's important is that I'm here now with you

He basically answered zero of my questions if it was a test he would've failed dismally

Me: how did you get in?

His: I have a key

Me: how did you get it?

Him: I cut a copy from yours

Me: I don't even know who you are

Him: I also don't know who you are

I highly doubt that

Me: I'm Liyakha and you

Him: nice to know you Liyakha

Me: what's your name?

He takes a sip of his hot chocolate

Me: you're not gonna tell me are you?

Him: ask no questions and I'll tell no lies

Me: what do you want me to call you

Him: anything

Me: but you're not a thing

He just stares at me

I sigh

Me: it's frustrating that I don't even know your name and I've already slept with you, you act like a ghost coz you only come at night and you enter when I've locked, you don't contact me or anything you disappear for weeks...

He cuts me off

Him: work takes me away a lot

Me: where do you work?

Him: for a travel company

Me: does it have a name

He again just stares at me

I sigh

He leans in to give me a kiss and I move away

Me: you are not gonna tell me anything are you?

He shrugs

Me: are you married? Do you have kids is that why you don't wanna tell me anything?

Him: I wish I was.

I just decide not to ask anything anymore

Him: I'll tell you what I think you should know

Me: and your name? You don't think I should know that?

Him: no

Me: are you involved in anything dodgy



Him: what do you mean by dodgy?

Me: just anything illegal

Him: depends on what you mean by illegal,  
illegal on whose terms

Me: come on

He stares and I just give up

Me: ok, at least I know you're a Zulu man

He smiles at me and leans in and this time I let  
him be he takes my cup and put it on the  
headstand

He pulls me on top of him and his hands  
explore my body, his lips never left mine and I  
swear Im dripping down there

He effortlessly pulls off my top then unbuttons  
my shorts, he lowers them to my thighs and his  
hand comes in contact with my silky wet  
mound and he groans in appreciation, I literally  
grind on his hand and he slips in his middle

finger as I'm getting accustomed to only one he slides in his index finger I gasp for air and he just lazily smiles at me

I'm literally grinding on him and it's not enough I want the real deal

I get off him and take off my shorts together with my thong and I remove the blankets and he's standing to attention

I try to sit in him and he quickly holds my waist as if he remembered something

Me: what?

He just moves me away from his manhood grabs my waist and makes me sit on his face, oh my good Lord is he trying to kill me?

His tongue flicks and sucks my cl\*t I feel like calling him by his clan names

I'm now riding his face and he literally groans from just muffing me and I go insane, a guy

who actually enjoys eating me out , but for whatever reason I want him I've been imagining him buried in me for a while

I try to move away from his face and his grip tightens on my waist

Me: I want you

Gosh he slides his tongue in and I scream, my eyes rolled to the back of my head and I moved faster but I still want him in me

Me: please

He moves me away from his face and sits me on his chest, I look at his manhood and he's leaking and he looks like he's gonna pop a vein

Him: I'm not suppose to be with a woman this weeks

Me: but you're already here with me

I attempt to touch his manhood and he grabs my wrist

Him: I'm not suppose to go all the way

Me: but I want you

I'm literally whining right now

Him: oral will have to do

Me: why did you come here then? You know I haven't had any since the first time you came over

He looks at me surprised

Him: I didn't know that, I thought maybe you're seeing someone

Me: I'm not

I feel like crying right now, he's here and he won't give me any

He unexpectedly grab me and sits me in his face again and this time he's more intense on the licking and sucking I feel my toes curl and and my back arch and I know I can't hold it, he slightly grazes his teeth on my nub and I know

I'm gonna squirt I try to move away but he holds me down

Me: I'm...gonna..... squ...irt

He loosens his hold on me as I try to get off him I literally do it all over his chest and he watches me with narrowed eyes, I hold on to the headboard and fall apart, he's unashamedly looking at me squirt . I think I'm almost done when he palms my cookie and quickly rubs on me and I'm back to square one with the squirting, I release a string of curses and look down at him and he's totally enjoying this

Me: st...op ple...ase

He lets me go and I fall to the side facing up breathing heavily

Him: are you okay?

He chuckles just after asking me that

Me: yeah I'm more than okay

I try to hold his guy and he yanks my hand before I get to it

Me: just oral

Him: I'm not suppose to ejaculate either

Me: are you serious right now? Says who?

Him: orders are orders missy, like I said I'm Zulu and very traditional

Me: should I be worried?

Him: no, now let's sleep

Me: are you gonna be able to sleep

I looked at his thing

He chuckled

Him: we won't know if we don't try now would we

Me: I suppose not

Me: let me change the sheet

Him: it's fine leave it

He pulled me to his chest

Me: please don't disappear on me again

He remained quiet

Me: then call me if you go away for a while

Him: okay

I held on to him for dear life who knows when I might see him again

[05/27, 08:26] : Insert 37

As usual I wake up alone in bed but this time it's different he left a note, yes a note saying he had to rush off somewhere and he'll be back by midday which is weird, I mean he never left a note nor returned immediately, usually it would be days, weeks or even months before I see him again, but I'm not complaining I can't wait to see him again, I get up and properly clean up

then I take a longer than usual shower I mean there's a someone now that I need to look good for, I mean I might have to go for waxing quite often, yes it's hella painful but I love the results it looks nice afterwards and I think he also likes it, I finish up and it was scorching hot outside so I just put on my oversized t-shirt and my lace underwear and I was barefoot, I decided to cook a full meal, roasted steak, chicken coz I didn't know which one he preferred, I cooked pap, mashed potatoes with cheese, creamy spinach and chakalaka, that would have to do if he doesn't feel like those then too bad, I was taking out the roasted food in the oven when I heard my door open, I was startled at first but then again I remembered he has my key, he walked in

Him: hey beautiful

He came and held me from the back as I placed the oven tray on the counter



Me: hey

He squeezed my butt

I turned and looked at him, but this was a bit awkward I didn't know whether to hold him or not or how to hold him or where, he was a bit different in day light, I finally got the chance to get a clearer look, he is wearing navy slim fit formal pants which are tight around his muscled up thighs with a crisp white t-shirt a thin brown belt and brown shoes, he's has straight white teeth it's as if he once had braces on, he has a neat trimmed cut and that dimpled cheek is a bit visible even when he has a straight face, right now he's frowning and looking at me, he leans down and captures my lips, and my the way he grinds on me and grabs my ass I know where this is going and I back off

He looks at me puzzled

Him: what's wrong?

Me: nothing, ain't you hungry?

Him: I just wanna start with desert first

He squeezes my butt a bit tighter

Me: desert will be served later, take a seat and I'll dish up for you

He does just that but I can tell he's not pleased at all

I dish up for him and myself then we dig in, I'm sitting across him on my tiny dining table but it would have to do, he eats like he's been starved for years then I pour wine for us and I can see it on his face when he takes a sip that he's not a fan

Him: don't you have beer?

Me: no

Him: this

He points at the wine

Him: is not my stuff

I giggle at the face he's making

Me: too bad it's all I have

Him: I'll pass, but there's something I don't  
wanna pass on though

He gets up and walks towards me he pushes  
the chair away from the table and literally picks  
me up with both his palms on my but and  
makes me straddle him while he leans on the  
edge of the table

He's all over me like heat rash and I can already  
feel him poking me and I pull away

Me: can....

He's back at it kissing me like it's his last day on  
earth until I gently push him away

Him: what now?

He sounds irritated

I climb off him and he sighs dramatically

Me: I wanna get to know you

Him: but I already told you what you need to know

Me: ok I get that, but what are we?

Are we dating? Are we friends with benefits? Or we are just fu\*\*\*\*g

Him: what do want us to be?

Me: I wouldn't be asking you if I knew

Him: I'm not good with this title thing, why do we have to put a title on it? Is it necessary

Me: are you serious right now?

Him: I'm just asking

Me: then tell me so that I know where I stand

Him: what do you want me to do?

Me: I wanna go out with you, have fun with you during the day, I don't want this to be a night

thing, where I only see you when you feel like fu\*\*\*\*g me, I wa....

Him: fine let's go out then

Me: I don't want it to be like I'm forcing you to....

Him: then you don't wanna go out?

Me: of course I do but....

Him: then go get ready before the sun sets since you want a during the day thing

Now I feel defeated

Me: don't do it if you don't want to

Him: I want to

Me: then what are we?

Him: we are getting to know each other

Me: people who are getting to know each other don't f\*\*k like we do

Him: don't compare yourself to other people

Me: ok ok, where are we going then

Him: just get dressed comfortably then leave the rest to me

I nodded and ran to change, I just put on my pink Fila sneakers with leggings and I didn't change the oversized shirt, I let my braids be.

Him: don't you have jeans or something

Me: what's wrong with my leggings him: they are just a bit too tight, they show off this

He lightly spanked my butt

Me: what's wrong with my butt

He sighs

Him: nothing let's go

He takes my hand in his

It was a few minutes after 3pm when we drove out in his car

We drove for about an hour and a half

Me: where are we going exactly?

Honestly I thought we were just gonna go to town, to some restaurant or something, when I said we must go out I didn't mean drive out of town for an hour and a half to a place he only knows

Him: we are almost there

He put his hand on my thigh and squeezed a little, it's now 16:45 when he parks outside a restaurant

It's written African cousin outside and it's dimly lit, when we enter I can tell it's classy with an African touch, there aren't a lot of people just a couple on the far end and two gentlemen not too far from them, I honestly don't pay attention to them, the waitress leads us to a table of two and we both sit, we are both given menus and the waitress leaves us

Me: I'm not really hungry though

I whisper to him

Him: we'll eat a little and get takeaways we'll finish up at your place

Me: are you sleeping over again

Him: you don't want me to

I shrug

Me: I've never been to your place

He focuses on his menu and doesn't answer me and I just do the same, I mean is he married? What is he hiding at his place?

After a while of me debating with myself on what's really going on with this guy he speaks

Him: we can go to my place it's fine

Me: if you don't want us to it's fine

Ok it's not fine but I don't wanna push

Him: it's fine and it's a few minutes away from here I'm a bit tired of driving



I nod

We order, well I let him do the ordering of food and we have our order packed and we order drinks and just talk, he's a very funny guy in his own way, he's different a breath of fresh air, he's weird in a good way, one of the guys on the table gets up and walks to us

Guy: Mntungwa, I knew it was you when you walked in, I didn't think the mis....

Him: Buthelezi

He cuts him off before he continues, then he gets up throws a few hundreds on the table and motions for me to take his hand, at first I wanna say no I'm still having my drink but the look on his face says let's go

I take his hand and he has me in front of him with his hand resting on the side of my waist as we walk out, he just left the guy standing there he didn't even say goodbye or introduce me, is

he ashamed or embarrassed to be with me?

What's going on

When we get outside I yank my hand out of his, is he embarrassed of me? Is that why he only came to my place at night?

We get in his car and he drives off

I put on my sit belt as he increases the speed on the road, he's taking a different direction

Me: take me to my place please

He looks at me and chuckles then his grip tightens on the steering wheel and he just focuses on the road

I keep my mouth shut and let him be, in about 30 minutes he enters a code at some huge ass gate and it slides open, there are lights on the drive way as we drive in and I can tell this is a huge house, the lights in the house are lit and it's huge, I thought Mr Logan's house was big and beautiful but this, this looks and feels like a

small heaven but it doesn't take away from the fact that I'm pissed at him and I wanna be in my small apartment, but wait how does someone who works for a travel company afford all this.

He parks and opens my door I just sit there and stare at him, he try's to undo my seatbelt

Me: okay, okay I can do it myself

He's still pissed for whatever reason, he's face is hard and he waits for me to get off and he bangs the door

He opens the door and walks upstairs , I don't know whether to follow him or just stay here

In a few minutes he walks down and he has a blazer on and a small black bag

Him: the alarm code is 1645, the master bedroom is the last door on your right upstairs, I'll be right back

He kissed my forehead and walked out

What the hell? Who on earth does that? For goodness sake it's my first time in his house a huge ass house that is and he just leaves me alone? Haibo!! What's going on?? What's so important that he just had to leave me alone, he didn't even get a call or text but he's rushed off to God knows where

[05/27, 08:26] : Insert 38

I'm woken up when the door open and I hear someone punching in the alarm code, yes you guessed right I fell asleep on the sofa while waiting for Mntungwa or whoever he is to come back, I sit up and stretch preparing myself for a well deserved explanation. He walks in as I'm still wondering what's taking him so long

Him: morning, sorry did I wake you?

Me: are you serious right now?

Him: I had something to take care of for a client

back at work it needed some confirmation  
before he boards the plane back home

Is this dude f\*\*\*n for real?

Me: you left me all alone in your house the  
whole night, who on earth does that?

Him: I assume it's just me?

Me: is that really a question?

Is it me or he had a change of clothes?

Him: I need to take a shower, I was up all night

My jaw is literally on the floor by now but I  
quickly compose myself

Me: can you please request an Uber for me I  
wanna go home

Right now I regret trusting him enough to leave  
my phone and purse behind, but honestly I  
didn't think we were going this far

Him: can I take a quick five shower then I'll take

you home if you wanna go

What the F... am I hearing things right now

Me: I WANNA GO HOME RIGHT NOW, I'Ve BEEN WAITING FOR YOU THE WHOLE DAMN NIGHT.....

Him: please keep it down I can hear you just fine, I'm just requesting 5 minutes of your time to freshen up

He literally just left me stunned, by now my jaw is digging holes in this tiled floor

In about 10 minutes he walks down looking a bit fresh he's eyes still have the eye bags, maybe I'm a bad person but I don't feel sorry for him

He opens the door for me and we both walk out I get in my side and he gets into his and drives off

He's not saying anything just focusing on the

road, my heart feels heavy I feel used somehow, I feel like he got what he wanted and now he's treating me like trash, why do men do this to me? All they see is sex with me and that's it after that they don't even see the need to apologize when they are wrong, he used me! For goodness sake he was probably with his wife I mean where else could he have gotten the change of clothes? They don't even look like new clothes, and I'm pretty sure he doesn't have a closet at his "travel company" there's a lot of loose ends with this guy and it's getting to me, coz to him I'm just a piece of p\*\*\*\*y he gets to f\*\*\*k whenever he feels like it, he has zero respect for me

I don't realize I'm crying until I feel the wetness on my cheeks

I quickly wipe them off, why would he take me so far away from town, is it because he was afraid that he would bump into his wife or

people who knew him and his wife, my gosh he probably has 7 children for all I know and I've given myself to him time and time again, but the way he touched me I thought.... argh it doesn't matter when have I ever made a right decision when it came to the opposite sex?

It's when the car comes to the halt when I realize I've probably cried a river

I realize we are on the side of the highway

I still just look out the window

I hear him take a deep sigh

Him: what's wrong?

Is he for real?

Me: please take me home

My voice breaks and I hear him silently curse

He gets of the car and bangs the door and I get a fright



He kicks the tire on his side first before he comes to my side and opens the door, he squats and take my legs turning me to look at him, I don't know why this hurts so much, I've don't remember crying for a man in my life and here I am crying for a stranger, for goodness sake I don't even know his name, even though I think he's clan name is Mntungwa but still I know nothing about him

He places his palms on my thighs and takes a deep breath

Him: I'm.....

He takes another deep breath

Him: I'm... im sorry I left you by yourself

That seemed to almost suck the life out of him, but why is apologizing so hard for him, he's wrong!!

I wipe my tears with my palm

Me: are you married?

Him: I wish....

Me: don't give me that I want a yes or no answer

Him: no, I'm not married

I yank his hands away from my thighs and put my legs back in the car and face forward

Me: if you're not gonna tell me the truth you might as well take me home

Him: I'm really not married

Me: how do you explain the clothes you had on when you returned from wherever you went, I'm not stupid you know!!!

Him: I have another house...

Me: where your wife and kids stay?

Him: I don't have a wife or children please believe me

Me: then what's going on

He sighs and runs his hands over his head

Me: take me home

I doesn't look like I'm gonna be getting any answers from him

He gets up and closes the door then gets in and drives off, we reach my apartment and when I try to get out he locks the doors

Him: I don't know how to do this Liyakha this is all new to me

Me: how's this all new to you? You're a grown ass man

Him: you won't understand...

Me: try me

He sighs

Me: what? You don't trust me?

He chuckles

Him: I've only known you for like what? A few months?

Me: I think you should stop coming over

He looks at me and I don't know whether that's a disappointment look or what on his face

Him: I can't not see you

Me: tough coz you won't be seeing me anymore coz I don't wanna see you anymore, I'm changing locks and don't even think of coming back unless you gonna come clean, I'm done with this, whatever it is I don't want it, you're too shady I don't even know your name, and I'm guessing if it wasn't for that guy I wouldn't even know your clan name, so please stay away from me

For the first time I think he doesn't have a come back, I stare at him waiting for him to say something anything really

Him: Sthembiso Khumalo

He leans his forehead on his steering wheel

I stare at him surprised, did he just give me his name? But yet again it seems like it took everything from him, why is it so hard? He sits back and stares at me

Me: it's nice to know you Sthembiso

He just stares at me

Me: was that so hard?

Him: yes, it actually was

Me: are you willing to tell me what I want to know

Him: I can't tell you everything but I'll let you know what you must, the deal breaker was that you didn't know my name but now you do, are we good now?

Me: we are getting there

Him: please don't change your locks

Me: I'll think about it

He nods

Me: when can I see you again

Him: about that, I'm actually going away on business for 6 weeks

Me: oh, mmh but when where you gonna tell me that if I didn't ask

He sighs

Me: or where you just gonna disappear on me yet again

Him: please allow me to get used to all of this

Me: how old are you

Him: 27

Me: and yet it seems you can't handle a relationship at your age it's quite surprising

Him: maybe I've never been in any

I laugh and he keeps a straight face

Me: come on no man at your age has never been in a relationship it's not like you were a Virgin before we met

Him: no I wasn't but this is new that's all

Ok how is it new again? For a 27 year old?

Him: what happened today won't happen again I promise

I nod

Me: promise to call me

Him: I'll try if I'm not too busy

Me: what's up with the change of clothes

Him: they were at the dry cleaner and I got them in the morning coz the ones I had on smelled like sweat

That doesn't sound convincing at all but I have to give him the benefit of a doubt right

Me: so you really not married with kids or

seeing anyone?

Him: no

Me: okay then I guess I'll see you in 6 weeks

I honestly couldn't hide the disappointment in my voice

Him: I'll try to call now and again there's a lot to do on this trip

I nod

He curse my cheek with his hand and gives me a faint smile

Him: take care of yourself

Me: you too

He leans over and softly pecks my lips

He unlocks the door and I get off

He waves goodbye as I walk away and he drives off

At least we're making progress now I know he's



Sthembiso Khumalo and I'll miss him dearly but at least he promised to call

[05/27, 08:26] : Insert 39

It's been 2 weeks since Mntungwa left and I honestly feel like I'm going out of my mind but I have to focus coz I'm writing my exams, sometimes I just feel like calling him or texting him but then again I remember I don't have his contacts, I've searched all platforms of social media one can think of I've even tried LinkedIn, google and there's nothing, of course there's other Sthembiso Khumalo just not the one I'm looking for, today is my last paper and I honestly can't wait to finish and wait the dreadful 4 weeks left, yes I'm actually counting, I like how he makes me feel when I'm around him, no it's not the butterfly feeling it's more of a hundred tiny heart attacks each time he touches me, the way he smiles, his white

perfect teeth in contrast with his dark skin, his dark smooth skin against mine, oh my Gosh I don't think it's normal to be this hyped up for someone, he's driving me crazy especially because he hasn't called me in the two weeks he went away, I finish up my shower and get ready to leave my exam starts at 08:30am and it's 07:45 which gives me enough time for breakfast, after breakfast I took what's needed then drove to school. It was just after my paper when Lindo called I haven't heard from him in a while and I felt like a horrible friend coz I promised to not be a stranger

Me: hey you

Him: yeah right pretending as if you missed me

Me: I actually did friend

No i didn't I was too occupied with Mntungwa I actually forgot that I had a friend, I know I know, I'm a bad person

Him: yet you never bothered to contact me for a hangout or something

Me: sorry I had exams but it was my last paper today

Him: good timing then, I'm at my place and I need help with LJ please come over

Me: need help??? Where's his mother?

Him: long story, could you please come

Me: sure thing

Him: please bring my favorites

Me: wine and pizza?

Him: you know me so well

I hung up and went over to Lindos place, I could hear LJ's cry from the corner turning to Lindos place

What on earth did he do to the poor baby

I drove in and the door was open so I let myself

in

Me: what did you do to him

I placed my bag the pizza and wine on the counter and he almost literally threw the baby at my arms,

He quickly walked past me and for the first time ever he didn't smell so good, then I heard the shower running, I giggled to myself as I tried to calm a angry looking LJ, after a while he finally settled down, I sat on the couch and hushed him to sleep, I just held him in my arms and stared at this cute little human in my arms, he hasn't changed much but has grown just a little from the last time I saw him, I was just so drawn into him I didn't even notice Lindo was leaning against the couch watching me

Him: how do you do it, I've been at it since yesterday midday

Me: it's not that hard, wait, did you say

yesterday midday? Where's Sonto

He cleared his throat

Him: let me put him to bed

I handed him a sleeping LJ, and that's when I noticed his diaper is full and he kind of messed up my dress

Him: sorry I didn't notice his diaper was full

Me: I sort of smelled something but I didn't think it was his diaper I thought it was you

Him: huh huh, funny

I actually laughed at him

Me: now I need a shower

Him: you know your way around

Me: what will I wear

Him: I'll borrow you my clothes

Me: now you're the funny one aren't you

He shrugged and walked away to put LJ down, I didn't smell so good so I decided to go ahead with the shower

As I walked in the bathroom Lindo came out of LJ's room

Him: need help

I gave him the middle finger and he giggled and walked away

I quickly took a shower, I just made it quick coz I didn't want Sonto finding me naked in her boyfriend's shower then I took Lindo's robe and put my dress in the washing machine on quick was I wanted myself back in my clothes as soon as possible

When I walked in the lounge Lindo was placing my phone down on the table

Him: geez this guy has been blowing up your phone with calls, damn he's in too deep

Me: what g....

Then It clicked I quickly grabbed my phone and it was an unsaved number I knew it was him

Me: what did he say?

Lindo: not much, for the first 10 times he kept hanging up when I answered but the last time he called he asked me where you were

Me: and???

Him: I told him you were taking a shower

Me: oh my Gosh Lindo really!!

Okay I also would think otherwise if I was to call him and some woman answered his phone and said his in the shower, I mean what the F was Lindo thinking

Him: hey come down breath he'll probably call again

Me: couldn't you say I was in the bathroom or something

Him: shower, bathroom same difference

He said taking a bite on the slice of pizza and at that moment I wanted it to chock him so bad

I dialed the number and it said it doesn't exist which is weird considering the fact that it just called not so long ago

Lindo: geez don't chop my head off

Me: it's just that I've been waiting for this call for so long

Him: just call the dude

Me: don't you think I've tried that already!!

Him: just calm down will you

Me: I wanna go home

Him: wow, so a new guy comes into the picture and I'm out like trash

Me: what?

Him: it's the truth, you meet him and it's like I



don't exist

Me: of course you do, it's just that...

Him: it's fine Liyakha I get it

Me: I just...

Him: I think the machine is done with your dress

Me: come on don't be like that, you also have Sonto

Him: do I? Really? Why do you think I'm here with a screaming baby and she's not

Me: then why are you taking it out on me?! It's not my fault...

Him: wow, I've been here for you even after you left the sex slave shit...

I covered my mouth in shock I just never thought he would bring it up at least not like this, this is below the belt like honestly

He didn't even finish his sentence my eyes were

already filled with tears

He stood up and came to me

Him: hey, hey, I'm sorry Snow Flake, I... there's no excuse for me to talk to you like that you did nothing wrong I'm sorry

Me: wow

He sighed and held my shoulders

Him: I'm sorry

He pulled me in for a hug

Him: I'm just so frustrated with everything, Lord knows were Sonto is and LJ is having none of it, and sometimes I feel like you also abandoned me, I knew the time for you to meet someone will come but I guess I'm just selfish coz I want you all to myself forgetting that I have Sonto and now LJ is also in the picture

I moved away from him

Me: I know I also haven't been a good friend

and I'm sorry, but I promise I'll work on it

He nodded and stared down my chest and his robe was a bit undone revealing the a little of my boob

He cleared his throat and looked at me in the eye and I moved away fixing the robe

Him: I haven't been with a woman since you and well Sonto says she's still healing from giving birth to my son

He said repositioning his manhood

Me: Lindo, I'm with someone and I don't wanna ruin it, he's a good guy and knows exactly how to please me I can't do that to him

He nodded

Him: I'm sorry if I made you feel uncomfortable

Me: it's ok I'll go check on my dress

He nods

I do just that and luckily the machine is done it's a little damp but it has to do I want out of here before I do something that I'll regret, when I walk down he's having the last slice of pizza, did he actually eat the whole box?

Me: I'll be on my way then

Him: can we just sit and talk

Me: I'd love to but that's not a good idea coz for one you are sex deprived and your hormones are sky high, you know I can't resist you but I have to try Im in a different path right now someone else is involved and I care too much about him, I know Sonto was always in the picture but I went into it knowingly so right now I'm being a little selfish for both our sake

Him: I understand but please do text and call I do miss you not just the sex but your company

Me: I will, I got to go

Him: thanks for coming over and with LJ he

didn't even wake up when I changed his diaper  
I'm also hoping to get a little sleep before he  
wakes

Me: ok then

We hug and I say my goodbyes, I get to my  
apartment around 18:00 and I take another  
shower and put on my pjs, I warm up my  
leftovers, after eating I watch a little tv and go  
to bed, I tried the number again and it still said it  
didn't exist, I put my phone under my pillow and  
slept. I was in deep sleep when I heard my  
phone ring, I answered without checking who it  
was

Me: hello

Caller:...

Me: hello

Caller:....

I sat up and checked it was an unknown

number

Me: Sthembiso

Caller: .....

Me: Mntungwa please talk to me

He sighed

And I knew it was him

Me: how are you?

Him:.....

Me: I miss you

Him: where were you?

Me: I was at a friends place

Him: a guy friend?

Me: yes

He sighed

Him: taking a shower at a guys place?

Me: I went there to see him and his baby

pooped on me so I had to take a shower

Him: so you don't have a shower at your place

Me: of course I do but...

Him: I feel like I'm going out of my mind right now

He sighed

Me: I know how it seems but please trust me I....

Him: I don't know what to do or think, for the first time in my life I feel so weak

He sighed heavily

Him: I got to go

Me: I...

He hung up on me

Oh Gosh not when I've missed him so much

[05/27, 08:26] : Merry Christmas fam

Something short

Insert 40

It was the following day and I was in my pj shorts and sports bra cleaning my apartment it needed proper cleaning and besides I had nothing else to do, I was done with my exams I had no job to keep me busy so I chose to do my apartment justice. My bedroom was done I was now in the lounge vacuuming my couch when he held my waist from behind, I jumped out of his arms in shock as I switched off the vacuum cleaner

Me: Jesus Christ, you scared the shit out of me  
I held my chest as I tried to calm myself down

Him: hi

Me: you scared me

I playfully hit him with the dusting cloth hanging



loosely on my shoulder

Him: come

He held my hand and walked towards the door

Me: Mntungwa I'm not even properly dressed

He looked at me from head to toe

Him: you look fine

No I don't, I was in a very short pj bottom and a sports bra, I didn't wanna walk out looking like this

Me: no I don't let me grab a dress or something

Him: I don't have much time, I only have a few hours here I have to go back in 3 hours tops

Know what fuck it I'm not gonna waste another minute

He led me outside to his car, luckily it wasn't parked too far from my apartment and I don't think someone saw us coz it was still early in

the morning

He opened the door for me and closed after I've settled in then he got in and drove off, judging by the directions I knew we were going to his house, he was quiet on the road with his brows furrowed as if something is troubling his mind, in an hours drive we drove in his yard, he parks and I open my own door as he gets off

He waits for me to walk to his side then he leads me to the door, this place is breathtaking, literally. He leads me to the lounge and we both sat on the same couch

He sat with his elbows on the top of his knees and his hands on his face, he remained in that position for what seemed like forever, he sighed heavily then looked at me and I gave him a lazy smile

Him: I'm not used to this

Me: not used to what?

Him: not being in control

Me: in control of me?

Him: no, in control of me, in control of what and how I feel, I don't like it, it makes me feel weak as if I'm not man enough, I feel like you got me by the balls literally!

I chuckle and he keeps a straight face

Him: I'm suppose to be in Singapore right now doing my job but I'm here, I couldn't do anything right after that dude answered your phone, I was in a none stop one way flight from Singapore to here for 10hr 40 min for a woman? That's just not me.

Wow that kind of hurt a bit, him saying it like I'm just a random woman.

Me: do you regret it?

Him: strangely no. I'm suppose to but I don't, that's the thing.

He sighs

Him: I'm breaking every rule I've been taught ever since I was 12

Me: maybe you should take me back to my place

He looks at me with disappointment written all over his face

Him: you don't get it do you?

Me: unfortunately I don't, coz right now you're making me feel like some random bitch who made you ditch work, take an almost 11 hr one way flight for pussy, no that's not a good feeling at all

Him: you really don't get it.

I shake my head no

He kneels in front of me with his hands on my bare thighs

He cleared his throat and took my hand and

placed it on his chest

Him: I might not tell you everything you think you need to know but I'll tell you this, I feel whipped. I feel like I wanna be here with you all day everyday watching you sleep, go get ice cream, take long baths together anything as long as you're gonna be right next to me, I don't think that's normal it feels like an obsession and sometimes I just wanna get rid of it, especially because it makes me feel like a dumbstruck love sick teenager, it doesn't make me behave like a 27 year old man

Me: this is also new to me, but the only difference is I don't wanna get rid of it, I'm happy you took that flight coz I was going crazy especially when you hung up on me last night

I put my hands over his

Me: I missed you so much I felt like I was going out of my mind, don't fight it, don't fight us

please

Him: I think I'm in love with you

Me: you think?

Him: damn I know I am and I don't know what to do

Me: don't do anything just let it take its course

He sits back on the couch and looks at me, I take that chance to sit on top of him.

Me: you've only got less than 3 hours now and I wanna make the best of it coz you still gonna go away for 4 weeks

His hands are on my waist, his fingers drawing patterns on my lower back

Me: can we deal with this when you get back coz right now I really missed you

I can already feel him getting hard and I take that as a sign to grind myself on him

Him: you make me feel so weak

Me: I love it when you're weak for me

Mntungwa

My hands are on either side of his face and I know I have him where I want him

I lean down and softly peck his soft lips

He's attentively looking at me but now he's eyes have narrowed

I lean back again and this time I kiss him like it's the last thing I'll ever do in this world, I alternate between sucking his bottom and top lip and he does the same, I slowly unbutton his shirt and carelessly throw it on the floor, I slowly get off him and kneel between his legs, I take off his trousers together with his boxers and he's just letting me, his member is out to play for sure, I've never done this willingly before and it feels empowering to have him at my mercy, I take him in my hand and he takes in a sharp breath

I lean to his other head and his hands quickly hold my head, I look up at him and he takes in a deep breath and let me, when I take in his head he silently curses and his hands tangle in my braids.

I work him until he's a blabbering mess, he can't help but thrust in and out of my mouth and I know he's close, I let him go and I swear he wants to curse me out right now, I stand and strip naked while he watches me

He stands and lifts me up while locking his lips with mine, my legs are around his waist and he leans me on the wall, his hands lightly squeeze my boobs and he groans from the back of his throat, my hand are on ether side of his face and I he's rubbing his head on me, I moan into his mouth and he presses me on the wall as he plunges all the way to the hilt, I scream out in pleasure and he groans, this time it's different he's hand literally worships my body, he's



tongue explores my mouth and he takes his time hitting every pleasure spot even new ones I didn't know existed, for whatever reason the look on his face makes my p\*\*\*y more wet, he tightly grabs my ass when I pulsate around his manhood

Me: oh my Gosh babe...this...feels so good

He's slow, passionate, gentle yet so hard Good Lord where has he been

His lips latch on my neck, his tongue dances on the most sensitive spot, I release a string of curses

Him: sthandwa sam, I'm really close

Gosh hearing those words from him make my p\*\*\*y flutter

Him: oh..shit....baby

Gosh I've never heard him this vocal it makes me wanna cry out loud it's insane

I grind myself on him, his hands balance on the wall and I'm only balanced by my legs around his waist and my arms over his shoulders, this position allows him to go deeper, my eyes roll to the back of my head and I feel my muscles squeeze him and by the way he quickens his thrust I know he's cumming with me, it goes on and on and I don't want it to end, when I come to, I realize his teeth are lodged on my shoulder and I feel him twitching in me and I know we are both spent

He moves from my shoulder still in me and he just lazily smiles at me with his suddenly small eyes and I just bury my face in his neck and he giggles at my sudden shyness

He pulls out and my legs drop to the floor both our juices slide down my legs, he picks me up and takes me to his bedroom, he places me on his huge ass bed and joins me.

He removes the strands of hair on my forehead

and plasters a kiss on it, I'm so satiated all I  
wanna do is sleep

Him: sleep, but I'm not promising that I'll be  
here when you wake up

Me: don't leave me in this huge house alone

Him: sthandwa sam I have to go back to  
Singapore

I just smile at him

Him: what?

Me: I love how you call me " sthandwa sam"

I imitate his voice

He laughs and I just stare at this gorgeous man

Him: I don't speak like that

Me: yeah yeah you do

He stares at me while he balances on his elbow  
laying next to me

He runs his hand over my birth mark and that's

like a lullaby, I'm out like a candle

[05/27, 13:28] : Insert 41

I wake up all alone in the house, he left a note saying I should make myself comfortable, he'll miss me and he wishes he didn't have to leave me but duty calls, he also said he wishes to find me naked in his kitchen cooking (uphuthu) pap and milk, somebody remind me why I went for a Zulu guy again? I mean imagine being in a sexy number in stilettos cooking (uphuthu) lol, it's ok I guess. There's a new dress next to it, for the love of God, remind me to never ask him to buy me clothes by himself in the future ever, this dress is hideous to say the least, he bought me a brown insanely ugly dress, who on earth still buys brown clothes? But I guess it's the thought that counts right? He left car keys with the gate controller and a card saying I should get fuel for the car in the garage and he'll fetch the car

when he gets back, but I don't feel comfortable taking or even driving his car, if only I had my phone with me I would have requested an Uber, well with the dress I have no other option but to wear it coz I don't have much to put on and cover up with from the pj shorts and sports bra I came here with yesterday, there's his t-shirt on the floor when I get out off bed I can't help but sniff it, it smells like sweaty him, but I wouldn't be cuddling anything else but this right now. I stay in bed for a while reminiscing about yesterday. The sun is setting when I get off bed. I walk into his en-suite and the entire bathroom is almost the size of my lounge and you would swear it has never been used before, it's squeaky clean which makes me wonder whether he did take a bath before he left, there's fresh towels, lavender shower gel a sealed toothbrush and plain baby lotion and soap it works better on my skin than the actual prescribed ones, they're just next to the basin,

I'm so glad he took notice of what I use for bathing when he came over at my place, which makes me wonder when did he actually get the time to get all of these?

Right after taking my shower I make up the bed and walk downstairs with my hideous dress it actually makes me grateful that he lend me his car how on earth was I suppose to walk around people in this? It's below the knees which makes it worse. I walk in the lounge there's no sign of our scattered clothes where we left them earlier today , I grab an apple in the fridge and I head to the garage, there's only three cars which also scream expensive but the one I have the keys to is an Audi, I'm not a fan of cars but I know it surely cost him an arm and a half and I know it's an Audi coz of the four conjoined circles, I know I know. I drive out using his GPS coz I'm not so sure of the directions, I get pizza and juice on my way back, I arrive at exactly

19:15. My cleaning staff is still where I left it, I am too exhausted to continue so I dig in and head to bed. I check on my phone and there's a few missed calls from an unknown number, I suppose it's him but I'm failing to understand why he calls with a different number every time and I don't even bother calling back coz I know it will say it doesn't exist. I was in deep sleep when my phone rang, when I checked the time it was 01:30 am and it was Lindo which was weird,

Me: hey do you...

Him: I swear to God I'm gonna kill her Snow Flake

Sonto was crying hysterically

I quickly sat up

Me: Lindo what's going on

Him: I...swear...if

LJ was screaming his lungs out

Me: come down Lindokuhle and tell me what's wrong

He also started crying

I quickly got out of bed and dressed up with the phone on loudspeaker, everybody seemed to be crying. I took Sthembisos car and drove straight to Lindos place, I got there in no time when I drove in the front window was broken and the door was wide open

When I walked in Lindo was on the floor sobbing while holding a gun, the entire place looked a mess, glass on the floor what looked like vomit on the floor, his t-shirt was torn LJ was sleeping on the couch with an empty bottle of paracetamol

Sonto's sob was coming from up the stairs

I rushed to LJ's side and felt his heart beat, luckily he was breathing, I panicked coz I didn't



know how much of the empty bottle he was given, it's as if Lindo didn't even realize I was here I knelt to his level

Me: hey you

I lazily smiled at him

He looked at me then back at the floor

I cautiously took the gun from him

Me: you look a mess

He looked at me and smiled but it didn't reach his ears

I sat next to him

Me: how much of that bottle did LJ take

Him: don't worry I wouldn't kill my own blood

Me: I'm just asking...

Him: relax it wasn't even half of it

I released a breath I didn't even know I was holding

Me: what happened here

Him: am I a bad person Snow Flake

I looked at him

Me: you? Bad? Not in a million years

Him: then what is it? Am I bad at sex?

Me: no you're not

Him: there must be something wrong with me

Me: hey friend, look, you're an amazing guy just in love with the wrong person, you're what most women pray for it's just that the heart wants what it wants, don't beat yourself up about it

Him: why couldn't you be my woman?

Me: it's complicated and we both know that

Him: I always knew what I wanted but right now I don't really think I know anymore

Me: I'll always be here for you i just want you to know that

He nods

Me: where did you get the gun

Him: I got a license a few weeks back

Me: and do you think it's s good thing to have it dangling on your fingers while your son it sleeping next to you?

Him: that's never a good thing but what choice do I have? She left me alone with a baby for 4 days! Four days Snow Flake! I couldn't sleep, eat, bath or anything the last meal I had was the pizza you bought the other day, she comes back smelling like a man yet she told me she's still healing from pushing out my son, the dude drops her off at my fucking gate, my damn house and I'm suppose to chill right and take care of my son, I honestly don't mind looking after him and she knows but that doesn't mean she should go bang some bank teller dude, the same guy that had her confused about who the

baby daddy is, and I'm a fool for love! Always forgiving in the name of love, taking shit in the name of love I can't anymore, but you know what hurts? is that even after all this shit I still love her and I don't want to anymore!

Me: I'm sorry you're hurting like this, believe me if I could I would take it away, you don't deserve this, you're a great guy, a great friend and I'm pretty sure a great lover

He sighs

Him: what do I do?

I shrug

Me: when it's time to do something you'll know

Him: I suppose

Me: is Sonto alright

He shrugs

I get up and follow the sobs

She's locked herself in the bathroom

I knock

Me: hey open up it's Liyakha

She continues to sob

Me: I just wanna know if you're okay

Her: don't worry I've called someone to come  
get me

Me: are you hurt or anything

Her: I'm fine

Me: ok I'll wait for that someone to arrive just to  
make sure you're okay

She just cry's and ignores my every attempt for  
her to open the door

I walk downstairs and Lindo is just sitting there  
admiring his baby

I just sit opposite them and admire the father  
and son love.

It's not long when I car drives in, I'm thinking it's probably sontos relative , the person that just budes in literally sucks the life out me, he also freezes for a few seconds when his eyes meet mine

Lindo just sits there playing with his sons tiny fingers and it's as if I'm under a spell or something, I can't move or anything tears run down my cheeks and the only thing that come out as a whisper is

Me: Thato

He calls out For Sonto and follows her voice

Lindo doesn't move, his tears drop on the couch and he just sits there staring at his baby

Everything is as if happening in slow motion and for whatever reason I cannot move

Thato comes back with a swollen eye Sonto, his hands holding her waist as they walk towards the door, she doesn't even look at LJ as she

walks out

When the car has driven out I finally find the strength to stand and go sob with my dear friend. I pull him for a hug and we both cry

Me: why didn't you tell me?

He shrugs and just cry

Me: I'm so sorry, I'm sorry Lindo

Him: it's not your fault

Thato? Of all people? But it should've clicked when he talked of a bank teller but there's thousands of people who work as bank tellers I never thought in a million years it would be my rapist brother, never!

[05/27, 13:28] : Insert 42

2 weeks later

I spent the night at Lindos place that day , no don't imagine things, nothing happened, it was the three of us on his bed, me, him and LJ. I wanted to comfort him the way he did me without doing the deed, at first he wanted us to but I couldn't go ahead with it, yes I wanted to make him feel better but not by sleeping with him, he was just a mess I've never seen him like that, not even when he found out Sonto cheated on him. He was absolutely broken it really tempted me to just go all the way and just do it with him but every time he touched me Mntungwa came into mind and at some point I just could not bare being next to him I wanted to get in the car and head to my place but LJ came into mind and I couldn't leave him in that state with a baby. When we woke up the following day I asked him why he didn't tell me about Thato and he just shrugged, I tried to make a conversation with him but he was having none of it, I ended up leaving later the



following day coz I needed a change of clothes and I didn't smell so good, I went back the following day just to check on him, well let's just say that's why LJ has been staying with me for the past week & 3 days, I've contacted his parents and his mom said she'll be able to make it this week with no specific day as to when, don't get me wrong I love babies but a week of sleepless nights are more than enough thank you very much, after looking after LJ I can honestly say I'll probably never be ready to have a baby, it makes me wonder how mothers of twins, triplets and quadruplets do it for the life of me I can't imagine. I wake up to a screaming LJ like usual at its 03:15am, I yawn my way to the guest room coz that's where he's sleeping, I take him and go warm up his bottle him hot water, it's not long after he's started sucking on his bottle when he falls asleep and I know ill follow soon so I take him to bed with me and I fall asleep the moment my head hits the pillow.

I'm in deep sleep when my phone rings and it wakes LJ up and I'm pissed

I don't even check who it is I just answer in annoyance

Me: what!!

Mntungwa: sthandwa sam

Me: oh sorry hi, how are you?

Him: is that a baby I hear in the background

I try to hush and warm LJ's bottle while I'm on the phone and it's proving to be impossible

Me: yeah sorry about that I'm babysitting for a friend

Him: I just missed you so much I thought we could talk coz I got a few minutes to myself but I guess not

I sense disappointment in his tone

Me: babe I really want us to talk I miss you

more but LJ is giving me a tough time

Him: LJ?

Me: Lindokuhle Junior

Him: nice name

He sighs

Him: ngiyakukhumbula muntu wam( I miss you my love)

Now LJ was really cramping my style, I don't know when I'm gonna get to talk to Mntungwa again and he's just screaming at the top of his lungs one would swear it's a contest

Me: I'm so sorry about this

I felt like crying right now

Him: hey hey it's okay, I'll try to call again soon okay?

I wiped my tears and sniffed

Him: I didn't know you were a cry baby

He giggles

Me: I'm not I just missed you that's all

Him: I'll call again sthandwa sam

Me: come back soon okay?

Him: I'll try

I sigh

Me; okay see you soon

Him: ok take care of yourself

He hangs up

I try to feed a seemingly irritated LJ and he's cried so much he basically wants nothing to do with me

I walk around with him around the house and he calms down a bit, I give him his bottle and he sucks on it aggressively and I know I'm forgiven.

It's already morning so I get on quickly with my daily routine and I take a quick 2 minutes

shower and I'm out, I'm putting lotion on when a knock comes through, I quickly grab a towel and head to the door, there stands a devastated Lindo all I wanna Do is wrap my arms around him and whisper that everything is gonna be okay, he's with his mother and I've never been so glad to see her and guess who the she devil Sonto

They greet and I welcome them in

\*\*\*\*\*

To be continued \*\*\*\*\*

Sorry fam I know it's short I'll continue tomorrow please forgive

[05/27, 13:28] : Insert 42 continued

Sonto takes the same couch as Lindos mom while Lindo takes the single couch, for whatever

reason she's staring at my birth mark it doesn't help that the towel just covers below my butt

Me: let me dress up quickly so I can attend to you guys

Lindo nods while the other two hold their own conversation with Sonto eyeing me like I stole her candy, LJ is peacefully asleep on my bed.

I quickly put on underwear and a maxi dress and flip flops and go listen to what actually brought them here more especially Sonto

When I enter the lounge there's awkward silence and I'm wondering what went down while I was not around, I take a sit on the empty couch and there's still silence so I decide to break the ice

Me: I can pack LJs stuff and get him ready

Sonto gives me a nasty stare at the back of my head I'm like bitch please

L mother: before you do that we actually came here to address the issue between my son and the mother of his child

Me: with all due respect mah, I don't think here in my apartment is the right place to do that

L mother: well it is because according to the information I have you're the reason behind this turmoil

Me: I'm sorry? I thought I heard you say I'm the reason behind the dispute?

Sonto gives a nasty chuckle

Is this bitch for real?

L mother: you're what led Sonto to the arms of another man

I look at Lindo and he seems far away I don't even think he's listening or aware of what's going on right now

Me: pardon me?

L mother: when Sonto found out that you're the girl that sent a nude picture to my son she didn't wanna hurt you coz she knew she'll hurt Lindo so she found comfort in another mans arms

I look at Lindo and he still looks out of it, if I didn't know any better I'd say he's high on something, then it clicks, she was staring at my birth mark coz she was putting two and two together and actually came out correct

Me: mah it doesn't make sense coz Sonto just s...

L mother; I'm used to straat mates like you, girls who don't feel right when there's nothing between their legs, but this time you've done it to the wrong people, look at my son, he's devastated because of the bitch tendencies you've pulled on him, are you happy now?

My jaw was literally on the floor tears filled my



eyes

There's a lot I wanted to say but I feared that my voice will break and give them the satisfaction they looking for so I swallowed hard and looked at Lindo who still looked out of it

Sonto: I'll spare you but if you practice your bitchiness on my man again I will not be held responsible for my actions

Me: Lindo!

He looked at me with tears in his eyes

Me: so you're just gonna sit there and say nothing

My voice betrayed me

He looked down and buried his face on the palm of his hands

Me: Lindokuhle!!

Him: I'm really sorry Snow Flake

Me: why did you actually come to my house? If you didn't see my birth mark what else were you coming over to do?

Sonto: we are here to get my son

Me: when did it occur to you in the past two weeks that you actually have a son?

I was really getting worked up

Sonto: that's bullshit I was still nursing my broken heart, how was I suppose to take care of a baby in distress? Point is you were fucking my man right under my nose even while I was pregnant!

Me: get out of my house

That came out as a whisper

L mother: we are not going anywhere until you apologize to Sonto

Me: with all due respect get the hell out of my house!

Sonto: where's my son?

Me: get the fuck out of my apartment!!! I swear I will not repeat myself!!

Sonto: Lindo!! Go get my son you know your way around here you were probably fucking in this very same couch I'm sitting on! Who knows you might be the one paying rent for this bitch!

I've had it with this loose skirt

I charged for her but Lindos mom stood in front of her

L mom: Don't you dare! Lindo go get your son we'll be in the car

They left with Lindos mom dragging Sonto out who was throwing every insult she could think of

I buried my face in the palms of my hands and sobbed, I was pissed, I don't think ive ever been this pissed in my entire life, i fucken took care

of her some two weeks of sleepless nights I even have eye bags thinking I'm doing good, for this shit.

Lindo came and knelt in front of me

Him: I'm sorry, I just don't know what's wrong with me, I feel detached from reality Snow Flake, it's as if I'm not in control of myself, I know you probably hate me right now but I'll fix me and I'll fix everything else, please forgive me

He pecked my forehead and stood up, I heard him walking towards my bedroom and in a few minutes I heard the kitchen door close, I don't know how long I sat there but my phone rang bringing back

Me: hello

My voice was shaky

Him: hey ummh are you okay

Me: I'm fine when are you coming back

My voice breaks and I can't hold the tears

Him: hey hey sthandwa sam I'm trying to wrap up here as soon as I can, before you know it you'll be waking up next to me staring at you sleep

I don't know why but that made me cry more

Him: Liyakha what's going on

Me: I miss you so much

Him: and I'm pretty sure that's not why you're crying right now

Me: it's n...

Him: who hurt you? Are you ok? Did you see their faces? Where are?

Me: I'm fine it's nothing I can't handle

Him: but you still didn't answer my questions

Me: I'm fine honestly, I'm just being a cry baby that's all

Him: are you sure?

Me: yes I'm fine, how are you?

Him: I don't know, I was but now I'm not so sure after you answered your phone crying I just wanna come back

Me: come back then

Him: I'll try to wrap up as quick as I can babe then I'll come ok

Me: okay

Him: how have you been, I can hear no child crying in the background anymore

I chuckled thinking how different things were an hour ago compared to now

Me: I'm fine his parents took him I got my me time again

Him: music to my ears

Me: you have no idea

He clears his throat

Him: what are you wearing?

Me: what??

Him: you heard me

I can tell he's not used to this

Me: a maxi dress

Him: bummer I thought you were gonna mention something sexy

Me: I could just take it off

I try to sound sexy

He clears his throat again

Him: please do

Me: I'm only left with my thong no bra

I decide to play along, I've never done this before and besides it's the thought that counts right?

Him: what color is your thong?

Me: white

Him: f\*ck... this phone s\*x thing is gonna make me ditch work

Me: maybe you should

Him: I can't keep coming back coz it's delaying my progress, sthandwa sam let me finish first then I'm all yours I might just take leave for a few weeks when I get back

Me: sounds good to me

He clears his throat

Him: Liyakha

Me: yes?

Him: I might take up to a month to wrap up this side there's so much to do I might have underestimated the work load

Now that's just sad



Me: oh

I can't hide the disappointment in my voice

Him: I'm sorry I know you miss me

Me: please just get work over and done with  
and come back Mntungwa

Him: ngizozama sthandwa sam( I'll try my love)

I sigh heavily

Me: so I'm not getting any for the next coming  
month

Him: you know I'll take care of it and make up  
for the time

Me: I know, I know

Him: take care of yourself

Me: you too

Him: bye

Me: see you in a months time

I sigh and fix myself it's no use crying over spilled milk

[05/27, 13:29] : Insert 43

One month later

Her: what kind would you like?

Me: errh I don't really know what I like or what he would like so...

Her: I could help you browse through a few things, which color does he like

Me: erhh...

Her: don't worry you could never go wrong with black, white or red

Me: I don't like red

Her: then I bet he really likes red

I looked at this shop assistant confused

Her: believe me he'll love it

Me: I'd rather take black

Her: black is totally out of the question, it's the law of attraction, somethings that you don't like your partner could be head over heels in love with so trust me hun I've been in this Industry for far too long

I just nod, who knows she might be right, besides I've only been seeing Mntungwa for a few months, but it also made me realize that I don't know much about him besides the fact that he's Zulu and his name is Sthembiso and that he owns a really expensive house, I don't know what food he likes but he mentioned something about pap and milk, I don't know what colors he likes, he's favorite place and all that I really need to get to know him. Well it doesn't take away my excitement, I am over the moon, I don't know which scented candles to buy or what kind of lingerie he would like to see

me wearing. Gosh I'm getting ahead of myself aren't I, let's start from the beginning, so Mntungwa called yesterday and he said he's coming back today he'll probably be here around 2pm but he'll start and his place so I decided that I wanna surprise him at his place with some sexy lingerie and a home cooked meal, he left me the gate controller the last time he left me at his place and I still know the code so it shouldn't be a brainer, The shop assistant pretty much chose everything for me from 3 piece lingerie that is( a almost see through red lace bra and thong with something that you wear on top it looks like a see through short dress, geez I don't know what it's called and according to me it should be for free coz it shows everything well it's not like I wanna hide anything but it's... know what it doesn't matter really) she said I'll have to get a pedicure coz it looks better barefoot, something about not being "overly done and dramatic about it" her

words not mine, then the second one was a navy thong it looked like police underwear with a belt that you clip over it, the leather belt had small leather pouches on the side that looked like gun pockets the police, it came with a police cap and a bra that looked like a bikini top with a leather jacket that had police badges all over it, it had stockings that only went up to the thighs and she said that one I had to wear stilettos with actually she said "it's a must darling", she was so friendly she even recommended a blind fold and I just bought it

Her: is that all?

Me: yeah I wanna go look for scented candles now

Her: give it to him good hun

I couldn't help but blush

I paid at the till point and went candle searching, I just decided to get different shapes and sizes

and mostly they were lavender scented that's the only smell that didn't make me wanna gag, i went to Woolworths and bought beef that's already marinated with chicken strips, macaroni and frozen stir fry, I bought pastasauce, I then went to the dermatologist for recommended scented bath salts and soaps for people with albinism so that they don't irritate my skin, then I put all the things in the boot and headed to his place, I arrived there around 11 I only had three hours to cook, bath and look good for my man, I started with the cooking and I just decided to make macaroni with stir fry and I added the cheese pasta sauce then I made his pap he was gonna eat that with milk if he didn't like what I cooked then I made beef stew, I lowered the heat while I went to take a bath, I filled the tub then used the bath salts and oils, and I must say they really smelled nice, I had about 30 minutes to spare after my bath, and I didn't know which lingerie to wear, the police one

seemed a bit too much and I didn't like it much, but the assistants words rang in my head it's as if I took her voice with me, "it's the law of attraction, somethings that you don't like your partner could be head over heels in love with so trust me hun I've been in this Industry for far too long", maybe I should just wear the police one

I applied lotion and some oils on my skin and I got ready, I took his robe and put it on over the costume as I went to finish up with my pots, It was a few minutes after two pm when I heard a car pull in, I made sure to park mine in his garage just so he doesn't notice anything, I quickly took off his robe and threw it behind the couch and I cat walked my way to open the door for him, the leather jacket was open at the front revealing the little pushed up boobies that I have they kinda looked sexy I must admit and the clip over belt hang just right on my tiny waist, and well the stilettos and thigh stockings

did wonders for my legs, I was still a bit shy though I didn't know how he would react what if he's not into these things but it's too late now to chicken out I heard foot steps but it didn't sound like one person but it could be the nerves, I waited until he punch in the code and disarmed the alarm system, it smelled nice with the candles on and I think I look good

I waited until I assumed he was close enough to open then I opened the door and, BOOM, right in front of me stood a chubby guy with a chicken wing in his mouth holding a heavy looking bag, the moment he saw me his jaw dropped and so did the chicken wing, behind him stood a skinny colored guy with small eyes also carrying his huge ass bag and last but not least there stood my man, I didn't know what to hide or how to hide it so I just banged the door in their faces and ran to get the robe, I was so embarrassed, I didn't know what to do whether I should go



open or sit or stand or go change and put on decent clothes, they saw me naked, well not entirely but they did none the less, I heard some commotion coming from outside

Mntungwa: you saw nothing now I said get in the damn car and leave

Guy1: i doubt your grandpa was even sick the last time you ditched us while we almost nailed and sealed the deal

Guy2: was madala ( grandpa ) sick or you were just pussy sick

Mntungwa: just one word from you two again one more word and I swear to God we'll be burying you next week

I heard laughter from the two guys

Guy1: it looks like we touched a nerve there, is she the one? We've never seen you with a woman let alone a woman in your house

Guy2: yeah bruhh this is interesting

The two laughed again

Mntungwa: do you have death wishes or something? Coz you better have good reasons why you're still here

I heard them laughing as if walking away then I heard a car start and driving out

The door opened and he put his bag on the floor and walked towards me I was still standing in

My stilettos not to far from the couch

He walked towards me and gave me a warm much needed hug, I missed him so much I hugged him back

He whispered in my ear

Him: hey, I missed you so much

I whispered back in his ear

Me: I missed you too

He pulled away

Him: I'm sorry about those two idiots they really don't know when to stop

Me: it's ok, you didn't know I was here

He took my hand and led me to the couch

I was so embarrassed it was paralyzing  
honestly, I was playing with my fingers and kept tightening the knot of the robe, he made me look at him by putting his fingers on my chin and turning my head

Him: you look beautiful

Me: thank you

He stared at me until I looked away

He sighed

Him: it smells nice in here what did you make?

Me: it's pasta and beef stew but I also made pap and milk

He smiled at me

Him: I'm starving

Me: I'll dish up for you

I took off the stilettos coz my pinkie toe was hurting I don't care if this costume looks good in heels I've had enough

I went to dish up for him I think I lost my appetite after that little scene at the door

We went to the dining table and I gave him his plate and sat across him

Him: come eat with me

Me: I'm not hungry

He stood up from his chair and came to pick me up, he sat me on his lap like a baby and literally fed the both of us

Me: I'm full

I said after a while of being fed

He wiped my mouth and his hands

Him: still feeling grumpy

Me: they saw me naked

Him: I know I was there

Me: they must be thinking so low of you

Him: I doubt, I actually think they are so confused and turned on they don't know what hit them

I giggled and punched his chest

Me: don't joke like that

He giggled and held where I punched him

Him: i know you gave me an instant bonner

Me: you like it??

He made me stand between his legs while he was still seated and slowly untied the robe while looking at me, he seductively removed the robe slowly off my shoulders and let it drop to

the floor, then he removed the jacket and just stared at my body, he scanned from my face slowly moving to my boobs and his hands gently squeezed, his eyes were nearly piercing through my skin, he stares at my tummy for a while and also run his fingers then moves all the way to my cookie and he lightly pecks it over the under then his eyes move to my face and he lazily smiles at me, his eyes are filled with want

Him: I love it

I can't help but lower my lips and capture his, I kiss him so slowly and passionately he returns it with the same heat, I sneak my tongue into his mouth and he gently sucks on it but quickly release, my hands are at the sides of his face towards the back of his head, and his hands are on either side of my hips, I slowly move my hands to his back and run them down his muscled up back, he groans from the back of

his throat and his hands move to my butt as he squeezes and lightly spanks, now that brings all the pressure to my nub, I kiss him more deeply and our tongues dance against each other, the next thing I hear is plates breaking on the ground as he uproots from the chair and sits me on the edge of the table

Now he's the one between my legs, he holds the back of my head and deepens the kiss

I try to take off his t-shirt but he's taller so he finishes off, I unbuckle his belt and slide his trousers to his ankles followed by his boxers and he has a look of being pleased on his face

He unhooks my bra and loosely throw it in the floor, then he stares at my boobs, his fingers tease my hardened nipples and I can honestly say I'm dripping and his other head is not so far behind

He literally snaps the sides of my thong and

pulls me towards his manhood, but he's taller, so he takes a sit and pulls me to sit on top of him, I feel my muscles tighten as I slide down his length and he curses silently , my eyes literally fill with tears when I look into his eyes and receive the same affection he's making me feel, I start moving and his hands are guiding my up and down and grinding on him, he pulls me down and smashes his lips on me and I release a trembled Moan and I feel myself build to my destination, my inner muscles involuntary clamp around his length and I feel him almost jerk off the chair

Him: f\*ck sthandwa sam I missed you so much

He says through his teeth

I now move more confidently on top of him, I can't help it but ride him faster and he's now tightly holding on to my waist

Me: baby I'm gonna cum



I hold onto the back of the chair and ride him with passion and I can't hold it anymore, I feel him getting harder, he has this focused look on his face with his jaw tightened and the vein popping on the middle of his sweaty forehead and he deeply groans

Him: oh sh\*\*\*\*t

My movements get uncoordinated and so is his thrust meeting half way and we both fall apart screaming each other's names and I'm spent

I lay my head on the side of his neck as we both catch our breaths

Him: I didn't mean to take you at the dinner table

I giggled

Me: it's ok

He's fingers run up and down my back

Him: is everything ok?

I look at him confused

Him: no, it's just that...uhh it's nothing

He sighs

Him: let's go to bed

He stands up while still inside me and takes us to his bedroom

I lay on the bed while he wets a towel to wipe the both of us

He cuddles me from behind with our legs intertwined and we fall asleep

[05/27, 13:29] : Insert 44

Mtungwa has been back for three days now and I'm loving every moment of it, we went to get me a change of clothes at my apartment coz I've been here ever since the surprise that nearly went wrong, well he's an active guy, he wakes up every morning around 4 and jogs

around the neighborhood then he comes back and go to the gym in the basement, I've asked him why can't he just use the treadmill and he said he enjoys the morning breeze well beats me coz there's air con in this house he could just adjust it to his preferred temperature but I suppose there is a difference, most times when I wake up he's already done showering and gosh at times he makes me feel a little body conscious coz well I'm not perfect I have little cellulite on my inner thighs and well there's nothing that I can do about the stretch marks on butt they are not severe it's a few lines and one can hardly notice them from a distance unless paying attention, what am I even saying, well I have Stretch marks on my butt and ladies guess what, it's absolutely ok, I just woke up and I'm stretching when he walks in with a towel hanging low on his waist, I don't even feel ashamed of my messy hair, I decided to remove the braids and let my golden Afro breath and he

loves it, he loves pulling on it and massaging my skull especially when it's properly moisturized and soft,

He walks towards me and balance on his hands pecking my lips, well I'm tired of reminding him of morning breath coz it doesn't work he pecks my lips anyways, with the little time we've spent together ive learned quite a few things about him, 1 he's not a morning person he's forever grumpy in the morning and goes back to his normal self as the day proceeds, 2 he doesn't eat in the morning but I've been forcing food down his throat coz breakfast is the most important meal, 3 he's horrible at joke telling but some get to me and I just laugh at how horrible the joke is, 3 hes only left with his maternal grandpa, well he's all he ever knew coz his mom was killed by his father when Mntungwa was still young he said he doesn't remember how old he was or much of the

incident and his grandpa doesn't ever talk much of it, he calls his grandpa baba (dad), the father disappeared from the face of the earth after the murder no one knows where he is, 4 he loves pap you can literally give it to him dry and he wouldn't mind and well he knows just how to make it, well he doesn't have a favorite color so he says but I think navy or black coz most of his clothes are either navy or black there's hardly any color except for his boxers or vest

Him: morning

Me: hey

He walks past me and goes looking for clothes and I just let him be and go take a shower, well he wasn't joking when he said he'll make up for the month he went away coz I have the "been satiated glow" it's as if I'm sun kissed but we've been indoors ever since, but today we are going to KZN Ushaka Marine world for a few days and I honestly can't wait coz I've never been, I take a

shower and head to the bedroom to lotion and dress up, then I go make breakfast

He's watching the news channel, oh and that's another thing he could watch that channel the whole day and doesn't mind , I make bacon and eggs with cheese toasted bread and mashed avocado

Then I squeeze some of juice and I hand him his plate, by now he's much better the morning grumpiness is wearing off

Him: have you packed everything for the road?

Me: I'm not done yet I'll go finish now, have you packed?

Him: uhhm sthandwa sam I was thinking

Me: uh huh?

I say with my mouth full

Him: can we go past kwa Mkhulu( grandpa), it's only a few minutes away from where we are

going and I haven't seen him in a while, I was thinking that if we're gonna be in Durban then I might as well go past home

I chew while looking at him and swallow then take my juice, and he's looking at me with anticipation

Me: mmmhh.. i...

I sigh

Me: maybe I can stay at the hotel for the time that you go see uMkhulu

Him: about the hotel... I was thinking we cancel the booking and go stay at Mkhulu's, he has more than enough space and you won't even know he's there

Me: Mntungwa I don't think that's what I want to do

Him: oh

He's totally disappointed but he can't possibly

think that I'm gonna stay at his grandpas place I mean I don't even know him never met and now I'm gonna vacate at his house no way, and besides we don't know each other like that it's too soon

Me: it's just that..

I sigh

Me: I wanna enjoy my time there and I won't be comfortable around your grandpa and we're not even married or anything, don't you think it's too soon?

Him: I suppose it is

Me: I'm sorry

Him: it's ok I understand, I'll just go over there for a few hours just to see him

Me: how old is Mkhulu?

Him: he's 70 years old but I must say he's aging gracefully you'd swear he's around late 50s to



60

Me: must run in the family coz you don't look a day above 23

He giggles

Him: Im not gonna pack much up just take my toiletries I'll pick up some clothes at grandpa I'm not so fond of luggage

Me: ok let me finish up

He takes my plate and his and rinses them in the sink while I go finish packing

We decided on driving there, it's gonna give up sometime to get to know each other and all that

I have on my short jean overalls with sports bra and White Fila sneakers, I tie my Afro in a high bun and Mntungwa has on jeans relay black and white t-shirt with white sneakers and we are good to go

Well firstly we fill the tank then go past the

shops and get some liquids and snacks the we hit the road,

5 hrs later with four stops for the ladies room must be the liquids I've been drinking a lot of juice and water throughout we are driving in durban and there's an instant change in the atmosphere

We get off at the fuel station for the loo and I'm hoping it's the last time now, my feet are swollen must be the long drive I don't think I've ever spent that much time in a car.

We both get off and use the loo thankfully this time I'm not the only one

We get back in the car

Me: My feet are swollen can't wait to get to the hotel so I can elevate them

Him: could be the distance, you can put them over the dash board

Me: it's ok we're almost there, I thought you were gonna say yours as well

Him: well I'm used to long distance traveling so I'm still ok

I nod

He drives to our hotel, he booked it and I must say he did an exceptional job this hotel is amazing the room is out of this world it's spacious the view is amazing, we have a lounge which looks amazing the kitchen is spotless and well the bedroom is out of this world with white and grey touch the bed, well let's just say we'll be testing that out tonight

Are bags are taken care of and I throw myself on the bed

He gets on top of me

Him: tired?

me: very, I never thought traveling could drain

me so much

He kisses my lips

Him: wanna sleep?

Me: for a few hours yes but firstly let me take a shower first

He runs his hands over my bare thighs

Him: maybe I could just go see uMkhulu while you take your nap I'll probably be back before you wake up

I nod

It doesn't look like I'm gonna make it to the shower coz the next thing I feel is him pecking my forehead and taking off my sneakers before I hear the lock turn on the door and I'm out like a light

I'm woken up by commotion coming from what I'm assuming is the lounge area, I get up and go check and there stood an old looking man he

has the sangoma (traditional healer) cloth thrown carelessly over his left shoulder and those white beets around his wrist, he has an excellent physique for a 70 year old I'm assuming it's Mkhulu and a pleading Mntungwa for him to go before I wake up, he says something about he'll talk to me first, they don't even see me standing there until I clear my throat

I swear Mntungwa wants to dig a hole and hide Mkhulu turns towards me and walks with open arms he gives me a warm hug and it's the third warmest Hug I've ever felt after mom and Mntungwas of course

He pulls away as if something shook him, then he looks at me in the eye

Him: ngiyathemba uyaphila?

Me: ngiyaphila Mkhulu

Then he breaks into the hugest smile, so this is

where Mntungwa gets the dimples from

He then turns and looks at Mntungwa

Mkhulu: so how long were you planning on hiding my great grandchildren from me?

Mntungwa: I was gonna tell you soon baba

Where are the great grandchildren?

Mkhulu: so you were planning on staying here? You know the world is a cruel place, pack up we are leaving I will not have them stay here while I can cater for you way better, you can stay but they are coming with me

They? Whose they?

I am so lost, somebody explain to me what's going on

Mntungwa: baba can I please talk to her first?

Mkhulu: you had all the time in the world to talk about it never mind hiding my great grandchildren for two whole months from me,

you know with the kind of work you do they gonna....

Mntungwa: baba!

Now that was firm it even shook me

Mkhulu looked at me then back at Mntungwa

Mkhulu: you will not ever raise your voice at me I'm not one of your guys, it's not my fault that you chose to keep...

Mntungwa: baba please not now, we'll be right behind you

Mkhulu: it's nice meeting you young lady

He turned around and walked out

Me: what's going on? Where are the grandchildren Mkhulu is talking about? And I told you I don't wanna go over to his house why did you even agree to it, and what is it that you were gonna tell him?

Him:Can we sit

Me: no I'd rather stand

Him: I

He sighs

Him: I saw it the moment I came back but I thought it was because i haven't seen you in a while

Me: saw what?

Him: the difference

Is this guy gonna talk or what?

Him: the line at the center of your belly, the dark nipples and how your boobs got bigger, your eyes are almost pure white but I..

I chuckled

Me: babe I'm not pregnant I'm on contraceptives it will only run out next year

Him: Mkhulu hardly gets things wrong he...

Me: well this time he's got it all wrong



Him: he says it's twins

I chuckled again

Me: he's seeing wrong this time, look I'm not undermining the spiritual world and all but I'm pretty sure I'm not pregnant I would've had the morning sickness and all...

A knock came through

Mtungwa opened and a big guy stood there in a black suit

Guy: Mkhulu says it's getting late pregnant women are not suppose to travel at night

I swear if someone says pregnant one more time, I roll my eyes

Mtungwa we'll be down in a minute

Mtungwa: sthandwa sam can we please just go coz if we don't baba will surely be up here himself and it won't be nice, I'll explain everything to you when we get to his house

Me: I'm not pregnant Sthembiso Khumalo!!

I yell at him

For a moment he looks pissed then he composes himself

He went towards the closet and took out our packed suitcases and walked towards me

Him: I'm begging you now, can we go please sthandwa sam, if he's wrong then we'll go see the doctor tomorrow and prove him wrong please

I put on my shoes

Me: I don't like this, I don't like being treated like I don't have an opinion it's my body I would've been able to tell if I was pregnant especially with twins

I said as we walked towards the exit

Mntungwa: I know sthandwa sam I know can we talk about when we get there

I huff

There's three black rang rovers outside with 4 big man looking like statues standing outside , when we walk closer the first one drives off and the big man open the doors for us and take our luggage, we get in and I'm pissed I don't even feel like talking to him, he places his hand and gently squeeze my thigh, two of the men get in and drive off while the other car follows behind us, I don't like this one bit

[05/27, 13:29] : Insert 45

I was quiet in the car coz a lot was going on in my head, I still had school, I'm literally alone in this world, I'm letting myself down, I wanna be my own person without having to depend on anyone and that was going well until Sthembiso came with his ninja trained semen and boom I'm pregnant? I should've used a condom but I

thought the contraceptive was to prevent pregnancy, never mind pregnancy he could be sick for all I know, he travels a lot I'm pretty sure he meets all kinds of p\*\*y, but now isn't the time to be stressing about it what's done is done, I don't realize I'm crying until he wipes a tear rolling down my cheek with his thumb, I don't even look at him I look out the window

How can I be so stupid? I'm not even in my mid 20s yet, what am I gonna do with babies? I have no woman figure in my life for guidance, never mind a woman figure I literally have no one, I might be a target soon for Vusi's cult people, who knows how long until they come for me, who's gonna look after my babies then? What if they also have albinism? Then they'll be a target for ritualisms, I can't do this, Mntungwa will forever be an absent father...

I'm brought back when he squeezes my thigh

Him: we are here

He smiles at me and I just wipe my tears with the back of my palms, the guards open my door and we walk out, the sun is already setting, I walk out and I'm hit by how huge the the yard is, there's a huge house at the center and at the far end of the yard there's three mini houses bigger than my apartment though, Mntungwa comes to my side, he takes my hand in his and leads us to the main house

Me: I'd like to rest right now

He perks the top of my head

Him: we'll just let baba know we've arrived then I'll take you to our cottage

I just let him be as he leads me to the main house

I thought his house was breathtaking but this, this is a little heaven, even the outside screams expensive, just looking at the nicely trimmed grass one would think the person who trimmed

it was in a competition for best grass cutter in the world, I don't even think we are allowed to walk this pathway to the door in shoes, that how clean it is, if the outside is like this it makes me wonder how the inside is like

Mntungwa opens the front door and we walk in hand in hand, and yep as I've guessed it the inside is.... well I'm speechless

He leads us to the lounge and Mkhulu sits there on one of the pure white couches paying attention to the news channel

We take a sit on the other couch

Mntungwa: baba we've arrived and Liyakha is a bit tired so we gonna retire to the cottage

he looks up and smiles at us

Baba:it's ok I'm happy that you're here, dinner will be served in a few minutes I believe the ladies are busy with it

Mntungwa nods

Baba: is everything ok ndodakazi( my child)

He directs that at me

Me: yebo Mkhulu everything is fine

I fake smile

He looks at me for a few seconds

Him: everything will be okay, you can go rest now

We stand up and Mntungwa leads us out to the mini houses, I say mini coz they look way to tiny compared to the main house, it's at the far end a bit far from the main house but we make it

He opens the door and like everything else in this yard it's squeaky clean

He shows me around and there's 3 bedrooms 2 bathrooms excluding the en-suite in the main bedroom there's a spacious lounge, dining and a kitchen, there's a mini gym and a glass wall

leading to the pool, the view from the sliding door looks like a safari especially with the sun setting it makes me feel like we are not in the same yard anymore and it's pretty hot

Mntungwa leaves me watching the bright orange of the sun setting and goes to change into shorts and a vest with flip flops, I don't think I've ever seen him this relaxed

He takes a couch behind me

Him: can we talk

I look away from the gorgeous view and I'm met by his concerned eyes

I take a couch opposite him

He gets up and sits on the same couch as me

Him: I'm sorry

Me: for what?

Him: not telling you when I saw the signs and bringing you here I know you said you didn't



wanna come, I know we're both new at this but we'll learn as time goes, Mkhulu will also help us out, we'll buy baby books and watch videos on how to change diapers and stuff, we can start buying things right now just so we have everything by the time they get here, I'll...

Me: I'm not keeping the babies

He kept quiet then moved away from me balancing on the arms rest of the couch and his head on the head rest facing up and he sighed

Me: i don't want a baby let alone two, what if they are born with albinism? We both know life ain't easy for people like me, besides I don't know you like that, I still have school to attend which by the way is opening in a week and few days, I don't wanna be dependent on you, I wanna be my own person, you don't know me that well, you don't even know the things I had to do to survive, Sthembiso I'm still young what

am I gonna do with two babies? I've never even held a new born in my life never mind 2

He took a deep breath and released still facing up

He didn't say anything

Me: I know it was stupid of us to go on without protection but I thought the contraceptive was taking care of that, Sthembiso I don't even know your status, you're always on the road months on end you probably do stuff to take the edge off, besides you'll always be an absent father with all the traveling you do, we are just getting to know each other let's not ruin it, i kn....

He took another deep breath and abruptly stood up, he took the keys on the counter and banged the door on his way out scarring me in the process

I remained seated and just cried, in a few minutes Mkhulu walked in

I quickly wiped away my tears and faced away

Mkhulu: I'm glad the ladies did a good job with cleaning up this cottage, is everything clean? The sheets? The shower?

Me: yebo Mkhulu

He sat where Sthembiso was seated and looked at me

It was silent for a while with my sniffs filling the room

Mkhulu: he's a different breed you know, at times I thought it was always gonna be the two of us with no one to continue our blood line that's how much of a loner he is, I'm not gonna sit here and say I've never seen him with a woman before coz I have which he tried so hard to hide from me but I know these things and this is my house so I sneak around and try to hint to him that I'm ready for great grandchildren but he just said I must just forget

about it “not in this lifetime baba” he would say

Mkhulu chuckles

Him: arg let me stop blabbering

He laughs that old mans laugh

He gets up

Him: I'll tell the ladies to bring your food over,  
ulale kahle ndodakazi( have a goodnight)

He walks out leaving me feeling worse than I  
was before, am I a bad person?

I run my hand over my tummy

Me: I'm not ready to have you yet, I'm gonna be  
a horrible mom, this is a cruel world, I can't risk  
your lives like this, I'm so sorry

A knock comes through and I wipe away my  
tears and go open

It's two ladies in maids uniforms, they roll in  
two trolley with covered small platters, water,

milk and juice in jugs , 2 plates, 2 bowls and glasses

Me: thank you

They walk out

I open the platters and my mouth waters, there's grilled vegetables with roasted beef, chicken curry, rice, there's plain pap which I'm assuming goes with the milk

I cover up and decide to wait for Mntungwa

It's a few minutes after midnight and I'm beyond tired, so I take a shower and go to bed, I keep on tossing and turning until I fall asleep , I'm woken up when I feel someone getting into bed next to me, and I know it's him

He faces away from from me

Me: Mntungwa...

Him: sleep we are getting rid of them tomorrow

He is just so cold, it breaks my heart, I've never

seen him this cold towards me not even when he didn't wanna tell me about himself

I face away from him and sob, he just switches of his side lamp totally ignoring me and that just makes me cry even louder, the next thing he gets up and takes a comforter in the closet and bangs the door on his way out

[05/27, 13:29] : Insert 46

I'm not gonna post this weekend!! So enjoy

^\*\*\*\*\*

I don't know when I fell asleep but I'm woken up by a banging door, well everything is being banged since last nights talk, I slowly sit up and my head feels heavy, I get off the bed and go splash water on my face and those red thick eye bags totally give my crying session away, I

change into leggings and a oversized sweater with sleepers it's a bit chilly outside then head to the kitchen I'm hungry, I didn't even eat last night, when I pass the lounge Mntungwa is watching tv

Me: good morning

He looks at me then back at the tv

Wow

I go to the kitchen and there's still last nights food but it's been warmed up and right now I feel like something salty and meaty, I fill up my plate with only the meaty stuff and go to the lounge, the moment I sit down he switches off the tv and leaves me, That hurts but I continue eating anyways

A few minutes later he comes back

Him: get ready your appointment is at 09:00

Me: ab....

He just turns and walks out the kitchen door, I check time and it's a few minutes to 8

I rinse my plate and take a quick shower then I wear matching adidas grey tracksuits with uggs, I wear the hoodie over my head as I head back to the lounge he'd already waiting for me at the door

Him: let's go

I don't bother trying to talk anymore I follow him, we get into the car and there's no sign of Mkhulu, he's the one driving, he doesn't even get the door for me, he gets into the drivers seat and I feel like taking the back seat and that's what I do, in a few minutes drive we get to the private hospital which he booked the appointment for me in, he even booked the abortion appointments maybe he doesn't want the babies too he was just pretending to hear what I actually thought of the pregnancy, he walks in with long strides in front of me and I



follow behind at times I literally have to jog to catch up with him, we get to the reception area and he talks to the receptionist who tells us to take a sit

He sits with space between us and he's as cold as ever

Me: I'm sorry

I can't help the tears that flow down my cheeks

He chuckles bitterly

Me: I jus...

My name is called out and he walks with me to the doctor

We get in and I'm asked questions like my HIV status which I state I don't know then a test is done and Mntungwa says he also wants it done the same time as mine, I look at him and he's looking at the doctor paying no attention to me whatsoever

The doctor does both our tests then he asks whether we're comfortable with him revealing our results and we both agree, and turns out we are both negative, I release a breath I didn't know I was holding, and Sthembiso is as cool as cucumber, the doctor explains the procedure to us and he confirms that indeed I'm two months pregnant, Mntungwa keeps a straight face and my mind is in turmoil

Doctor: you are gonna have to take off all your clothes and I'll give you the pill that will start the process then once there's bleeding we are gonna go for womb cleaning I nod and Sthembiso gets up

Him: I'll be outside

He directs that to the doctor, he doesn't even look at me as he walks out

The doctor gives me a few minutes to change into the hospital gown then comes back in

Doctor: I'll be observing you after the pills are ingested then the rest of the procedure I'll move you to the appropriate ward

I nod

He gives 4 pills which he says I have to take all of them at once

He hands me the water and asks me if I understand what's going to happen and I nod

I sit on those hospital beds in his office with the pills in my shaking hand and a plastic glass with water on another

Him: take your time

He takes a sit not too far from me

My eyes fill with tears I shut them tightly as I throw all the pills in my mouth, but the moment they land there with my eyes still shut I swear to God I saw my mom

I spit them out as quick as I threw them in, I roll

into a ball and sob

Him: should I call your husband in?

I shake my head in disagreement not even bothering to correct him

Him: it's ok you can sit here for as long as you like

I sit there crying for probably an hour or so then I sit up, the doctor has been sitting there watching me

Me: I don't think I wanna go through with this anymore

Him: it's ok ma'am

Me: I'm sorry for wasting your time

Him: you paid me to wait my time so it's ok

Me: can I change now

Him: sure

I close the curtains around the bed and change

back into my clothes

Me: thank you

He nods and I exit

When I walk through the hallway Sthembiso is sitting on the bench with his hands on his face

I sit next to him and sigh

Me: I'm s..

Him: let's go

He abruptly stands leaving me there, oh gosh he thinks I went through with it

I walk behind him and catch up as he enters the car I do the same

He turns on the radio and he speeds off almost hitting a car reversing out of parking space, I quickly put on my seatbelt and he just drives without his on

Me: please put on your seatbelt

He looks at me shortly then back at the road and chuckles bitterly

He's speeding up and I'm afraid for him

Me: let me drive, you gonna cause an accident

Him: why do you care all of a sudden about what and how I do it never mind how I feel

Me: Mntungwa please pull over

He increases the speed and I put my hand over his on the steering wheel

Me: please

He slows down and pulls over, we change seats and I'm the one driving, I can tell he's mind is miles away and he's getting pissed by the moment

Him: did it hurt?

Me: I....

Him: so this relationship is all about you huh?

What you want? What's good for you? Your way?

I pull over at some Safe spot

I undo my seatbelt and face him and he's looking at me dead in the eye and he's eyes have gone red

Me: I didn't do it, I couldn't go through with it

Him: I'm not fuck\*n stupid Liyakha

Me: I swear to...

Him: don't you dare lie to me!

He raises his voice and I'm frightened instantly

Me: Mntungwa, I promise you I didn't do it

He looks into my eyes and balances his head on the dashboard and he literally sobs, I've seen Lindo, Mr Logan and my dad cry but it didn't tear me apart, it didn't break me as much as seeing my man cry right now

I move closer to him and bring his head to my

chest and he lets me and we are both a sobbing mess, his hand moved to waist and his other keeps touching my belly

We cry for what seems like forever and I can't stop apologizing, he suddenly moves away from me and looks out the window

I compose myself and try to find my way back to the house, there's still no signs on Mkhulu when we drive in, he gets off first and I follow, he goes straight to the bathroom and I wanna join him so I do exactly that, I take off my clothes and as I walk into the shower he literally walks out, I didn't even feel like bathing but I finish up anyways and wear my fluffy gown, I head to the lounge and lunch is served, he's not talking to me so I sit next to him

Me: I'm sorry I know I said some hush things but I'm just scared Mntungwa...

Him: and I'm not? Coz Sthembiso has no



feelings right?

Me: it's not like that at all I j.

Him: I want out of this shit, I don't want anything to do with being in a relationship with you anymore, this is making me weak, I'm a f\*\*\*n mess ever since I met you but now, now I'm done, pack your stuff we leaving

He get up and leaves me shocked for days

I get up and follow him to the bathroom where he's packing his toiletries

Me: I said I'm sorry I've apologized time and time again, I didn't do it, I thought you'd be happy

Him: coz you have a remote control of my emotions right? You decide what saddens me and when you've had enough I'm suppose to be over the moon? F\*ck this!!

He walks out of the bathroom to the bedroom

Me: Mntungwa please I didn't mean to....

Him: I'll be there for my babies, that's if they really still there anything and everything they need I'll be there, I'll lay my life for theirs and I haven't even met them but with this "US" thing I'm done, I'm so done Liyakha

Me: then why did you book the appointment if you didn't want me to get rid of them

He chuckles clearly pissed

Him: you're unbelievable, you don't trust me you think I'm a f\*vkn pig that goes around sticking my d\*ck in everything that has hole? Is that how low you think of me? I love you the way you are, I wouldn't love my babies any less even if they have albinism, but no because you're God you decide my actions right?

Me: I'm sorry!

Him: wow you're sorry? So what now? Is everything suppose to be back to normal? I'm

done!!

Mkhulu: enough!!

Mntungwa: stay o...

Mkhulu: I said that's enough Sthembiso  
Khumalo!!

Mntungwa: we leaving

He pulled my suitcase outside with his toiletries  
in hand

Mkhulu: it'll be alright he'll be alright just give  
him time he's not used to this

Me: he said he's done Mkhulu

Him: that's what he's anger and head is telling  
him right now but his heart is screaming  
otherwise

Me: I didn't go through with the..

Mkhulu: I know little one, I know

Me: I didn't mean to hurt him like this

Mkhulu: I told you he's a different breed just give him time but I'm not saying you should take nonsense from him, he's just big headed that's all, some people say "men and their egos" but I think it's pride! He'll come around, just take care of my grandchildren in there and I hope this is not the last time you visit

Me: but Sthemb...

Mkhulu: go now it's getting late

He pulled me in a hug

Mkhulu: relationships are hard and they get harder, and for yours this is only the beginning stay strong and stand by him that's all he'll ever want

He pulls away

Him: take care little one

I walk out still in my gown coz King Kong decided to come play

I get in the car and wave Mkhulu goodbye as Sthembiso drives out, he doesn't even wave goodbye.

[05/27, 13:29] : Insert 47

I wake up and I'm exhausted from the get go, I've been waking up like this the past few days and my feet just never went down from the swelling which is a bit weird, Its been a week since Mntungwa dropped me off, he didn't even stay, he just brought in my suitcase and left, I've been trying to call the numbers he used to call me with when he went away but they don't exist, I've been claiming he's my man but I don't even have his cellphone number, I went over to his place and he didn't open for me, i regret the day I left that gate controller coz I couldn't even jump over the electric fenced wall, there was no sign of any cars parked on the driveway when I peaked through the tiny slits on the gate, I

haven't been sleeping much either I think it's because I'm stressed out, I decide to soak my body in the bathtub, I use the salts and oils that I bought the other day and just soak my body, the water soothes my skin and actually calms me down, I sit there until the water gets cold then I dry up and drag a robe over my shoulders, I head to my bedroom and lotion and now that I know I'm pregnant everything screams pregnant on my body, from my breasts to my tummy, it's act a bit hard which I think it's a bit early but what do I know about pregnancy or it's just all in my head, I put on a maxi dress with no underwear and get underway with my house chores, I can't wait to go back to school even when I know that I might not make it through the second semester but it's gonna keep me busy and sane, I need to get a few maternity wear and maybe put in a good deposit for a house, I don't wanna raise my babies in an apartment building, a 3 bedroom house isn't so

bad and the money Mr L gave me shouldn't run out without being put for great use, I'm in the kitchen doing my dishes when my phone rings

Him: hello

Me: hello Sthembiso I'm perfectly fine, just tired and your babies are not too kind to me, or what did you forget you impregnated me and you just left for days with not contact

I catch my breath and suddenly tears fill my eyes, I've missed him so much hearing his voice makes me cry or is it just the pregnancy

He sighs

Him: how are you

I can't hold myself I just sob

Me: the babies miss you

What am I even saying

He remains quiet

Me: I haven't been sleeping well and I think there's something wrong with the babies, my feet are swollen they never went down since the trip, my heart hurts and...

Him: ok, ok I'm coming over

I can't help but smile

Me: when can you get here?

Him: in a few hours

Me: hours? Where are you?

Him: I went away for a while

Me: and you didn't tell me?

He sighs

Him: I'm coming back now

Me: where did you go

Him: I'm taking the next available flight should take me an hour to two

It's no point fighting with him at least he's



coming back

Me: ok hurry the babies miss you

Him: you don't?

Me: please just get here Mntungwa

Him: on my way

I huff and hang up

I quickly finish up with my dishes and go get a wax and my nails done and maybe a hair wash and conditioning, luckily I know just the place that does it all, it's not like I wanna s\*x him but it's been a while I wouldn't mind but that's not what I wanna do I just wanna feel good, I get in my car and head straight to the salon, and I'm done in two hours tops, I drive straight back to my apartment and the moment I sit there's a knock,

I open and there he is, since when does he knock?

Me: hi

Him: hey

I move aside and let him in

Him: how are you?

Me: getting there, how are you?

Him: I'm better now

He takes a seat

Me: can I get you anything to drink?

Him: water please

I get him a bottle of water and sit opposite him

Him: how are the babies?

Me: I don't know but I think there's something wrong with them, I've got swollen feet and I don't sleep much

Him: there's something wrong with you then, not the babies

Me: if there's something wrong with me, then it affects the babies

Him: I suppose

There's silence for a few awkward minutes

Me: they missed you

Him: you didn't?

Me: what the babies feel I also feel and vice versa

That sounds so stupid but hey I'm trying here

Me: I've been horny the whole week, I think it's the babies

That also sounds so wrong but I'm trying here

He chuckles

Him: you mentioned something about swollen feet

Me: yeah

Him: let me see

I get up and sit next to him and show him my feet

Him: is this normal?

Me: I don't think so

He takes both my feet and place them on his lap and start massaging them

And it feels so soothing I actually moan from it

Him: maybe we should see a doctor

Me: yeah

I clear my throat

Me: maybe the doctor will also give me something to lessen being "horny" all the time

No I wasn't horny all the time but I was at the moment and it didn't look like he wanted to take care of it

He cleared his throat

Him: maybe

Is he being for real right now?

Him: get your bag so we can go see the doctor

I get up and I actually change the dress I put on jeans a loose fitting vest with no bra and flip flops coz I can't put in a covering sho coz of my feet

Me: we can go now

He leads me outside and locks my door and he actually get the door for me and I settle in he gets in his side and drives off

We get to the doctors office and luckily there's open space for one appointment,

Dr: good day sir, ma'am

Mntungwa nods and the doctor shakes my hand

Dr: what brings you here?

Me: we went on a trip a week ago and I found out I was pregnant and my feet have been

swollen ever since

Dr: it's quite normal for even a not pregnant woman to have swollen feet after a long drive but for your case it's alarming because you're pregnant and it's been a week, how far along are you

Me: two months

Dr: now that's a concern, coz preeclampsia is common in late pregnancy more so in women who have a history of high blood pressure, I cannot prescribe to you any medication for that especially because you're in your first trimester as it could harm the baby

Me: babies

Dr: more so when it's twins, I'll give you some vitamins and folic acid and I'll suggest that you don't stress too much about stuff and try to relax and elevate your feet more often, if you're working I'll recommend you take early leave or

try to not put too much pressure on yourself

Me: I'm a full time student

Dr: and that comes with a lot of pressure and most times you're on your feet

Me: I can't quit school

Dr: I'm not saying quit but if your blood pressure gets worse in the second trimester I might have to take you in until you deliver

Me: I'll try not to stress much

I look at a silent Mntungwa next to me

Dr; will that be all?

Me: mmh doc, I wanted to know if you can give me something to mmmh.. doc I'm just always horny so...

Mntungwa clears his throat as he abruptly stood up

Mntungwa: that would be all doc I'll take care of

the rest

I so wanted to laugh right now

I stood up

Dr: I'll give you a date for your next appointment  
it's gonna be soon because of your condition

Me: thanks doc

Mntungwa was already waiting outside

Me: I'm hungry

Him: what do you feel like

Me: anything with onion rings, maybe fish

We got in the car and he drove off

We went past fish away and we got a takeaway

Then he drove towards his house

Me: are...

Him: I just want us to talk that's all

He drove in his driveway and I got out



He took out a plate from his cupboard and dished my takeaway for me then we sat around the dining table

Him: I'm sorry about my reaction the other day

I nod with my mouth full

Him: I just got so pissed off and..

He sighed

Him: I'm sorry

Me: I also get pissed of but you don't see me acting up like that, there's a lot of things that get to me but I don't over react, like the fact that there's no way I can contact you, or the fact that you hide things from me, or the fact that there's unexplained security at Mkhulu's place, or the fact that you just go away without telling me or...

Him: I get it sthandwa sam

Sthandwa sam??? We back in business baby lol

Me: it's not that I don't see these things I do but

I don't wanna push and be a nagging girlfriend, I don't even question your work and what you do or the two guys that were here that day because I want it to come from you I'm not stupid

Mtungwa

Him: I know, I just.. I'm gonna tell you I promise but just not now,

Me: you still don't trust me?

He sighs

Me; coz it makes you look suspicious as if you're doing something dodgy

Him: I'm not

Me: and guess what I don't believe you

Him: I...

He sighs

Me: I'm not gonna force it out of you , you're are a grown up but you need to understand that I'm expecting your babies, and I am not willing to

raise them alone coz you have to travel or whatever, they need you, I need you, and I need assurance

Him: I'll always be here for you guys

Me: promise me

Him: I promise

Me: I can't wait forever to know all about you, coz I hate nasty surprises

Him: you won't

I finish up my food and go rinse my plate, I go back and he's now in the lounge channel hoping

I take the remote from him as I sit on his lap with my knees on either side

I hang my arms loosely around his shoulders and just stare at him

Me: I want you to trust me, but I know I can't force you to, even though sometimes I feel like I know you but most times I feel like I'm with a

total stranger and it ain't easy for me, that's why I felt like having the babies isn't an option on top of my fears hangs a risk that one day I'll wake up and you wouldn't be here or something would happen to you or I would discover the worst about you

Him: I'll always do my best to be better for you and them

He uncovers my torso and puts his hand over my tummy

Him: I'm not perfect Liyakha and maybe in the worst way but for you I try, it gets to me most of the time coz I'm not used to having to care for a defenseless person, Mkhulu has all the security he needs I'm not worried about him but with you I'm always uneasy, now that you're expecting my babies it makes it worse, I do things that might put you guys in danger and it freaks me out, it never did but ever since I met you everything bothers me, I know I might be

speaking in riddles but it's all I can say right now, I fear losing you and not only you but them as well, one day it all might come crashing down but I want you to remember moments like these

He sighs

Him: I got angry about the abortion coz I felt like you have no hope for us and no faith or trust in me, you spoke as if you knew I would be an incompetent father or partner and that bothered me coz I knew then that you have no idea who I am and what I value, no ones gonna hurt you guys on my watch and you'll never need or want of anything as long as I live, I'll lay my life for you guys, I'll even quit my job to spend more time with you

Me: you don't have to quit your job

Him: then don't ever doubt me and what I can or can't do, it makes me feel like I'm naked in a

way, it makes me feel so belittled and bare to the whole world and as if I'm unable to provide that assurance and safety for you all the time, I don't want you to ever doubt me

Me: I'm sorry

I didn't realize I was crying until he wiped my tears with his t-shirt

Him: I'm sorry too

I hugged him tight and I felt so safe and assured that he'll always be here and he promised to be

I felt all the weight drop off my shoulders coz I knew I'm not alone

I yawned

Him: you tired

I nodded against his neck

He stood up with me still on top of him and walked with us to his bedroom

He gently placed me on the bed and took off my clothes and his and covered us with a throw, he cuddled me from behind while his hand was on my not so there bump

Him: move in with me

Me: what?

Him: I took leave for a few weeks and I want you here with me all the time

Me: I have to go back to school

Him: I'll drive you everyday

Me: I don't...

Him: don't be quick to reject it as yet, please think about it, if you don't like it you'll move out

Me: Mntungwa we not even married or anything

Him: we can get married before you move in

Me: no, that's not what I want, it's not even how I imagined being proposed to

Him: just think about it sthandwa sam, i get to spend time with you before going back to work coz there'll be a lot to do after the leave at work

Me: let me think about it

He kissed the back of my head

His hands kept moving from my belly to my thighs and that seemed to be a perfect lullaby and I was out

[05/27, 13:29] : Insert 48

I wake up first and just stare at him sleep, these moments are rare so I really do a good job at it, i grab my phone and snap a pic of his scrunched nose I don't know what he's dreaming of but it doesn't smell good, he's so handsomely cute, his face relaxes again and I feel like kissing him right now but I let him be, he's smooth skin, those bushy eyebrows and those pouty lips I wonder if our babies will take



after him or me, I just wish one of them could look just like him I honestly wouldn't mind, he's facing up and he's torso is exposed the sheet only covers his man part, he's legs are out and my head is on his strong arm, I wonder what it is he does at work, deep down I feel like it's something dodgy, something illegal but he says he's working for a travel company what could be illegal about that? he looks exhausted so I just let him be, it's still dark outside so I turn on the lights and check the time and it says 04:30am, I put on his robe then go look for something to eat, there's food in the fridge it looks like left overs so I warm that up, I turn on the tv and the news channel is on, there's something about a Singapore human trafficking mogul found rotten and tortured on an electric chair in his million US dollar mansion a few days ago, I change that coz it makes my stomach turn just thinking of it, I just go for the reality tv instead, it's not long until he comes

down looking tired he's in his cotton Pj pants  
they hanging low on his waist

He throws himself next to me and pulls me  
back in between his legs with my back against  
his chest then he sniffs my hair

Him: good morning

Me: hey

I snuggle closer

Him: how did you sleep?

Me: like a baby though I woke up early coz we  
slept before sunset yesterday

Him: i needed the rest

He yawns

Me: me too, I haven't been sleeping much the  
past few days

Him: let's go out for breakfast

Me: that would be nice

Him: let's go take a shower

I stood up and took his hand as we walked to the bathroom

I wasn't wearing anything else but the robe so i just dropped it on the floor and he just watched

Me: having doubts about joining me?

Him: never

Me: so why are you still in your Pj pants?

I swear lightning doesn't strike as quick as he took those pants off, his guy was growing right in front of my eyes

I already had the water running and the steam was filling the en-suite

I got in the shower and he followed, he was standing behind me as he washed my hair and his hands were all over my body, from nipping my nipples to squeezing my butt, I couldn't help the moans that escaped my lips

His lips were latched on my neck and his hands touching me everywhere except between my legs, I needed the friction but it didn't seem like he was willing to take care of the itch, so I literally touched myself, he turned me around and pushed my back against the wall, I quickly removed my hand from there as I was shy to touch myself while he's staring at, he moved closer and took my hand and made me touch myself but I didn't move my hand I just palmed my cookie instead

He whispered in my ear

Him: don't be shy about it, I love it when you touch yourself

He moved away and watched me, his gaze was intense and he was biting his lower lip as he took his d\*ck into his hand, he was watching me the entire time and when he started pumping himself all the shyness went out the window as I started rubbing on myself with

determination, I didn't think he could get any harder, but he did, right in front on my eyes, his other head was already dripping and I wasn't far behind either my fingers were soaked, the veins on his arms and the frowned look on his face made me wanna cum, I increased the pace on myself and he did the same and my eyes rolled to the back of my head as I felt myself getting closer, my other hand was now on my boobs gently squeezing on my nipples and that seemed to drive him insane, he literally took one step and was right in front of me, he removed my hand down there and I was pissed coz I was literally two fondles away from my destination

He turns off the tap and presses himself against me, I can feel his hard member pulsating on my tummy, he lifts me up the back of my thighs on his arms and I'm wide open, he stares at me as he stretches his way through

my walls, my arms are wrapped around his neck and he has this focused look on his face, his lips are slightly parted and his bushy eyebrows furrowed, when he's fully in he relaxes a bit and softly perks my lips, the feel of him in me makes my walls clench around him

Him: don't do that sthandwa sam

He says with a almost strained voice

Me: I'm not doing it on purpose

When he starts moving I swear I see starts dancing, he's slow and gentle but today I want it hard, so I keep trying to meet his thrust grinding myself on him and he slightly pulls back his hands holding me in place

He latches at my lips and I give him a short kiss then pull away

Me: harder babe

I moan against his lips

Him: the babies..

Me: they're okay

He looks at me with a "are you sure look"

Me: they very far from all this action they'll be just fine

The kiss is now heated as he positions himself well then he's pumping into hard hard yet so good I don't know what to do with myself, I bite on his lower lip and I feel myself building up, my nails dig on his back as I also meet him thrust for thrust, he groans from the back of his throat and I feel his muscles tighten, his hold on my thighs get tight,

Me: baby

I moan into his ear

Him: sthandwa sam

He groans back into my ear

Me: oh my God

I moan out loud

Him: ngiyakuthanda ( I love you) MaKhumalo

I move my head away from his neck and smile at him

He increases his pace and the movements are now uncoordinated and I know we are both close one last deep thrust from him and we both fall apart, his teeth are lodged on my neck and my head is thrown back as I release screaming his name, it takes us a while to come down from that orgasm high but we eventually do

He lazily smiles at me and I smile back

Me: I love you

We shortly kiss and he pulls out, we finish off with our shower and we lotion and dress up in matching outfits, well not really matching but it was jeans mine was blue and his black with white t-shirts and sneakers his black and mine



white, we drove out

Me: where to?

Him: M&B

I nodded

We were quiet in the car but not awkward quiet more like satiated silence, it was probably a 15 minutes drive when we parked outside M&B, he ordered for the both of us and I honestly didn't mind, I ordered freshly squeezed orange juice and he ordered coffee with sugar no milk, we were halfway through our breakfast with small chat when I heard a voice I never thought I'll hear any time soon

Him: Mr K, long time man I thought you were out on business

He was behind me as I heard his footsteps walk towards us

He got to our table and they shook hands with

Mntungwa

He noticed me and froze

Him: Liya?

I didn't know where to look or what to do

Mntungwa: you two know each other?

Me: no

Mr L: yes

We talk at the same time

Now Mntungwa was confused

Mr L checked his watch

Mr L: I have a meeting in a few, I'll contact you soon take care

He turned my way and nodded then walked away

Him: what was that?

Me: can we talk about this when we get home?

Him: so you two know each other?

Me: please Mntungwa can we not do this here

Him: I'm just asking if you know each other?

Me: yes

I looked down on my plate

Him: we'll take doggie bags

He signaled for the waiter to pack our food and I stood up he took my hand in his as we walked out

We got in the car and he drove away, I was a bit panicked coz I don't know how he's gonna act when I tell him, he'll probably think I'm a hypocrite, I mean I've been putting pressure on him to tell me about himself yet I never told him about my past life, he'll probably want nothing to do with me after this, I mean who would? I was literally a prostitute for that man for over a year, this is a mess

[05/27, 13:29] : Insert 49

We drive into his yard and I already think I'm hyperventilating, he's been grabbing on that steering wheel much tighter than normal, he keeps clenching his jaw, and he scoffs now and again, he's been quiet ever since and I honestly cannot imagine the reaction he's gonna have the moment he hears what I'm about to say, and I think I'm having what feels like period pains, he gets out and opens my door for me, the moment his eyes land on me I see panic all over his face

He squats down to my level as I'm still in the car

Him: hey, hey breath for me just take deep breaths I'm here I'm not going anywhere

I didn't even realize that I was holding my breath the moment we drove in

I release and take a deep breath

His hands are gently rubbing up and down my thighs I suppose his way of calming me down

Him: Liyakha you're turning pale

Tears just run down my cheeks

Him: sthandwa sam whatever it is it's not worth suffocating yourself I promise you I'm not going anywhere

I try to breath steadily this time around and wipe away my tears

He takes my hand and leads us to the house, we enter the lounge and he walks towards the kitchen after I've settled down, in a few minutes he's back with a glass of water

Me: thank you

My voice is a little rusty

He sits on the coffee table and my legs are in between his

I drink up with shaking hands

He takes the glass from me and puts it on the table next to him and he takes my hands in his

Him: can you talk now

I shake my head not trusting my voice right now

He smiles at me

Him: come on it's not like you were in a relationship with the old man, I'm sure its not that bad

Now my heart is almost in my throat

He's looking at me for an answer and I swear I can hear my heart beat in my ears

Him: no you didn't

He drops my hands like they're hot

He stands and starts pacing up and down

Him: now ways

Me: I had no choice

Him: did he rape you?

I shake my head no

Him: then what happened? Were you dating him?

Me: no

His voice is low but stern, he's not shouting at me but he might as well be coz the tone of his voice isn't my favorite at the moment

Him: was it while you're also seeing me?

Me: no it was a while back

He's still pacing and I think I'm getting dizzy

Him: what's a while? weeks? months? Years?

Me: months?

Him: what happened?

I start crying, one coz I don't know what he's gonna think of me after I've told him two because I think the cramps on my abdomen are getting worse or is it in my head?

Me: please sit

He looks at me for a while before he does

Me: it was several months back when it happened, believe me I had no choice he was my only way out

Him: out of what?

Me: of what I used to call home and away from my brother

Him: was he your blesser?

Me: no... yes... well something like that

He sighs heavily

Him: you're speaking in riddles

Me: it all started when mom passed on and my dad abandoned me and my brother...

I narrate the entire story to him I even tell him about Lindo, basically everything, even meeting my dad and the supposed cult he's involved



with

By the time I'm done I'm a mess and he's still sitting on that exact couch with his palms on his face

Me: please say something

He looks up at me and he's eyes have turned deadly

Me: I'm sorry, I know I should've told you from the get go but everything happened so fast next thing I know I'm pregnant, but that's no excuse I should've told you so that you make a choice whether to continue with me or not, I'll totally understand if you decide to leave me I mean.....

He gets up from the couch and walks towards me, he perks my forehead

Him: I need some air

He takes his keys on the counter as he walks out

I was expecting him to bang the door or yell at me or something but he does nothing of that nature

I sit on the couch battling with my thoughts, I don't know whether he went out to try and process everything or he went out because he's trying to figure out a way to dump me or he just can't look at me right now, do I disgust him? Does he wish he never met me? He probably even regret going to that club that night he probably wouldn't have met me, he probably is disgusted by me I mean who wouldn't be

I sit on the couch and just sob, I knew this was too good to be true now he can't even look at me in the eye

I decide to go take a cold shower coz the headache is getting a bit worse and I think I'm really having those abdominal cramps, I take a cold shower which takes half of the heat away but the mild dizziness is still there and the

cramps of course

I think it's because I held my breath for long and the argument got to me, I take frozen yoghurt from the fridge and binge eat, it's the only thing I feel like right now

I sit in front of the tv and I can honestly say it's the one watching me coz I don't even know what channel it is, I don't know how long I sit on that couch like a zombie but I know it's dark outside, so I turn on the lights when I check the time it's a few minutes after 10pm to think that we were having breakfast not so long ago and now everything is different, I don't know where he is, I can't call him

I hear a car drive in and I wait in anticipation

He walks in after a few minutes, his eyes meet mine and I honestly cannot read his face right now

He sits on the couch opposite me

Him: I'm sorry I always go away when we argue

I look at him

Him: I don't know what to say

Me: anything

Him: I handled a business for him a few months ago and that's when we met, he seemed like a good man

Me: he is

Him: he's a pig!

He raises his voice and that freaks me out a bit

Him: I shouldn't be involved with him

There's silence in the room for what feels like forever

Him: I should pay that brother of yours a visit one of these days

Me: it's ok I'm over it

Him: well I'm not

Him: and as for your father, well let me just keep my thoughts to myself, but trust me that cult won't get anywhere near you guys

Me: please babe let's just leave the past behind

Him: how can I? It's not so much of a past when it freaks you out whenever you have to talk about it

Me: but I'm much better now than before

He sighs

Me: do you still wanna be with me

He looks up at me and he just stares

Me: I mean I'll understand if you don't

Him: come here

He pats his lap

I stand and go sit on his lap

Him: If you asked me a few hours ago before I went for some air, honestly I would've said I

don't know, coz I honestly didn't know what I wanted then, just the thought of another man touching you was enough to almost drive me rogue, I can't imagine you with anyone else especially not in that way and more so not with him, i also didn't dig up anything about you coz I wanted a Normal relationship for once in my life I owed you and myself a normal life

Me: what do you mean by normal? Him: just normal

I look at him with a confused look

Him: you won't understand, besides the doctor said don't stress

He sighs

Him: I love you and sometimes it drives me insane coz simple decisions I used to make aren't so simple anymore, I can't leave you even if I wanted to, coz I don't think I'm in control of myself anymore, the last time we fought I went

away coz I needed some time and I thought in a few days I'll be over you but I was only fooling myself, I know I might have overreacted maybe a little but that's just me, I know like everybody else you have a past and I have to accept it and hope one day when mine comes out you'll accept it as well

Me: should I be worried?

He shrugs

Me: would you have left if I wasn't pregnant

Him: no, I dont think I ever will willingly leave you

I look him in the eye

Me: I just don't want you to stay because of the babies, I don't wanna be those girls who stay because they have a baby with someone

Him: I'm staying because I want to, believe me I wouldn't be here if I didn't wanna be

I hold my abdomen as I feel the cramps getting intense

Him: are you okay?

Me: I don't know, I've been having these cramps since In the car, I thought it was just anxiety but something just tore right across my abdomen

Him: how bad from 1-10

Me: 4

Him: maybe we should go to the hospital

Me: it's fine it's probably just the anxiousness from telling you about my past it will probably go away in a few minutes now that I've calmed down

Him: are you sure?

Me: it's not bad I'm just probably being a cry baby, besides I hate hospitals

Him: tell me if you feel anything worse



Me: I will but it's probably just my uterus expanding for the little minions

Him: okay

Me: I'm hungry

Him: there's the breakfast takeaways from M&B, but I can order some food if you don't feel like it

Me: it's fine there's also yesterday's leftovers

I attempt to get up but he hold me down and softly kisses my lips

Him: we gonna fight a lot but never doubt us or our love for each other especially mine for you

I smile at him

Me: i won't

Him: good then

I get up and go dish up for the both of us, I don't know whether I should be glad about him accepting me and my past or worried about

what he said about his past coming out, what happens if I can't handle his?

[05/27, 13:29] : Insert 50

I wake up around midnight and I'm pressed, Mntungwa is wrapped around me and it's a struggle to get off his grip, he opens his eyes into tiny slits

Me: I'm pressed

He loosens his hold and untangles his legs from mine

The moment I stand I feel light headed, I probably take 4 steps towards the bathroom and I'm dizzy I stumble a few times before my head hits the floor

In a split second Mntungwa is kneeling in front of me with worry written all over his face, he holds my head and mumbles something, my

vision is blurry, I feel him put a pillow under my head and the last thing I hear is him banging the closet and the sound of keys

\*\*\*\*\*

I open my eyes and this damn light is too bright

He quickly rushes to my side

Him: hey

I panic and start touching my tummy it's not like I can feel anything but I'm panicked

Him: they're okay

There's this heart monitor machine hooked on me that keeps making faint heartbeats

I pull him in for a bone crushing hug and I'm a crying mess

How long have I been here

Him: it's 1pm now and you passed out at midnight

I just keep crying

Him: you just have to take things slow and not over work yourself and avoid stress at all costs

I nod on his neck not trusting my voice right now

Dr: I'm glad you're up, there are some things we need to address

Mtungwa moves away but I pull him close so he can sit next to me

Dr: I did say that preeclampsia is quite dangerous it, I don't think you took me seriously when I said avoid stress I meant it, not to scare you or anything but it could lead to infant death in your case two or even yours, so I'm thinking I should keep you here until you're well into the second trimester, I'm not saying there isn't danger there but it's better than the first trimester

Me: I can't stay here

Dr: unfortunately I wasn't asking, unless you don't value those innocent souls or yours

Me: how long are we talking here?

Him: 2-3 months

I sigh as tears fill my eyes

Mtungwa: mmh doc can we talk about it

Dr: I just need to check her blood pressure it needs regular monitoring and I need to check the records of the twins heart rate

He does exactly that before he leaves us

Me: 2-3 months?? In a hospital? I can't...

Mtungwa: can you hear that beating sound

Me: it's the babies hearts

Him: they were much faint than that when we came in, they couldn't find the second heartbeat and that was the scariest moment of my life and believe me nothing really scares me

Now I'm really crying as I keep touching my tummy

Him: hey it's okay, remember don't stress okay? It's gonna be fine we'll figure this out

Me: I'll try to stop stressing but school opens in a few days what do I do?

Him: wait let me get the doctor

He doesn't even wait for me to ask why he hurried out and comes back with the doctor

Mntungwa: mmh doc we were thinking, since she doesn't really like hospitals that would only add on to her anxiety can we hire a doctor and nurse and maybe arrange one of the rooms at home where she's gonna be comfortable

Dr: sir there needs to be machines for regular check ups of the babies hearts her blood pressure, urine samples needs regular checking, her diet needs monitoring, there's....

Mtungwa: we can buy or hire those needed machines for as long as they are needed, hire a house nurse and a doctor

The Dr chuckles

Dr: these things don't come cheap sir...

Mtungwa: money isn't a problem I'm just trying to make sure my family is healthy and safe

Dr looks at both me and Mtungwa

Dr: we are speaking probably a million for everything she's gonna need equipment and all

Mtungwa; it's fine

Me: babe the doctor said a MILLION

I stress the "million" part in case he didn't hear well

Him: I heard that

Dr sighs

Dr: I'll get you guys a quotation of how much

everything might cost if hired or bought, I'll also give you a list of live in nurses and private doctors but doctors don't live in they normally do house calls if the nurse can't help

Mntungwa: that would be great thanks doc

The doctor nods my way and leaves us

Me: babe you can't it's too much money that we can save for the twins I'll stay here it's fun

Him: and I suffer blue balls for 3 months? Never!

I giggle

Me: on a serious note though babe

Him: sthandwa sam it's done I'm not backing down, I wanna make this the most amazing and memorable experience for both of us

Me: where do you get so much money?

Him: work

Me: travel companies don't pay much



Him: mine does

Me: babe no they don't

Him: can we just enjoy the fact that we're making the best of the situation

I just nod

Him: I'll be right back

He hurried out

An hour later he comes back with my favorites and a cellphone box

He gives me my food and sit next to me

Me: and then?

I enquire about the phone

Him: my new cellphone so you can get hold of me whenever you want

I smile at him

Me: finally

He chuckles

Him: I'm sorry it took so damn long

Me: you sure took your time mister

He sets it up and takes a picture of me in hospital gowns and puts it as a wallpaper

Me: that's the ugliest picture of me

Him: you ugly?? Not even if you want to be

\*\*\*\*\*

One week later

Well it's safe to say he meant every word when he said he'll get it done, I only had to spend 2 days in hospital while the other bedroom in his house was being turned into my ward literally, I couldn't even protest about staying at his place coz he was literally having none of it, when I'm in that room I feel like I'm in a hospital but only difference is that it has homely touches I know

I'm not really in a hospital and that's a bit comforting, the nurse stays in one of the cottages outside and I buzz her when I need her she's a nice woman probably in her 40s or so, I'm with her in the kitchen as she prepares one of my shakes, which I hate so much but I suppose I can't do anything about it, Mntungwa went out to get some of my stuff at my place he's probably on his way back now

And sure enough he drives in but there's another car sound

I go open for him and there stands my dad

Oh gosh not now

Vusi: really? So you just move in with a boy

Mntungwa shoots him daggers as he walks past him carrying a heavy box

He perks my cheek as he walks past me

Me: Vusi what can i do for you

Vusi: so because you're cohabiting with a boy  
you think you can talk to your father any how?

Me: Vusi I don't have time for this

Mntungwa: why don't you invite your dad in  
sthandwa sam

Me: come in

He follows after me to the lounge

The nurse hands me my shake

Vusi takes a sit facing Mntungwa and I

Vusi: I was worried sick about you

Me: why? Worried that your cult came for me?

Mntungwa tightens his hold on my waist

Vusi: I'm sorry I'll try to fix this I promise

Me: have you fixed the disappearance of an  
innocent child? Your child to be precise whom  
was literally taken in the arms of his mother

Vusi: I can't fix that but I'll try to fix this I won't

let anything happen to you

The nurse comes back and hands me my supplements with bottled water, I thank her

I see concern all over Vusi's face

Vusi: are you sick

I chuckled

Me: as if you care

Vusi: Yakha please...

Me: don't worry I'm just pregnant

He shoots an evil eye at Mntungwa

Me: no no no, you don't get to do that

Vusi: so you impregnate my daughter and make her your wife just like that

Mntungwa: it's not...,

Me: you don't have to explain anything to him

Mntungwa: sthandwa sam he's right, I'm huge

on tradition so I should do right by you

Me: he doesn't deserve a cent for me

Mntungwa: can we talk about this later?

He perks my cheek

Mntungwa: I'll give you guys some space

He whispers

Mntungwa: don't get all worked up

He leaves us

Me: what do you want

Vusi: is it a crime to see my baby

Me: I'm not a baby anymore

Vusi: clearly since you're making babies

Me: are you here to insult me

Him: so when were you gonna tell me you're staying with a boy and that I'm gonna be a grandpa

Me: firstly he's not a boy and I haven't been living with him until last week because of some complications

Him: so I wasn't gonna know anything if I didn't find him packing your stuff at your apartment?

I shrug

He sighs

Vusi: I'm sorry Yakha

Me: that's what you do, you always apologize  
Vusi

Him: I guess I'm never gonna be dad again

Me: its a good thing you catch up real quick

He sighs

Him: I know I can't do anything to change your mind but just know I care about you a lot, I'll fix this mess and I love you

he gets up and kisses my forehead

Him: I hope he treats you well coz I swear I'll strangle him to death, take care of yourself Yakha and never doubt that I love you

Mntungwa walks in as my dad is about to walk out

Mntungwa: I'll do the right thing, I'll send my elders to your house soon for lobola

Did he say lobola? Haibo this wasn't discussed with me

Vusi: it better be soon

Vusi walks out

Me: lobola??

He sits next to me

Mntungwa: I just wanna do the right thing

Me: you didn't even talk to me

Him: I thought it's what we both want

Me: so what you live in my head now? you know



what I want and don't? I don't wanna be somebodies wife this young there's still a lot I wanna achieve by myself without being tied down to someone that's a big responsibility, being someone's wife is a big thing never mind the fact that I'm gonna be a mother of two in a few months I haven't even wrapped my head around that

Him: so you don't wanna marry me?

Me: not now

Him: when

Me: when I'm ready

Him: how about we just do the lobola but don't get married

Me; are you listening to yourself? You paying lobola means marriage traditionally

Him: then what do you suggest I do

Me: pay the damages we'll see as time goes

about the lobola thing

He nods but clearly not happy about it

Me; I'm sorry if I was hush

Him: at least you're being honest

I nod

Me: so you brought my dad here

Him: believe me sthandwa sam I had no choice, he found me packing at your place and he was breathing fire, he thought I kidnaped you or something and was trying to get rid of evidence

I giggle

Me: typical of him, but why would he think you're a kidnapper?

He shrugs

Him: protective father I suppose

I nod

He snuggles closer to me and he positions me

in between his legs and I'm laying on his chest

Him: I love you

Me: I love you more

He sniffs my hair before we slip into silence as we both doze off on the couch, it's huge enough and comfortable

[05/27, 13:29] : Season Finale

Insert 51

5 months later

I was now 7 months pregnant and I have had it!!! I was so exhausted but the doctor insisted that we keep them in there for as long as we could, I was still at Mntungwas house and I'm glad to say he's been with me ever since, he never went back to work after his leave ended he just decided to stay home until the babies are at

least 9 months old and I was glad because I needed all the help i could get, Mkhulu was said to move in as soon as the babies are born, it's times like these that I wish I had a mother figure in my life, I met up with Lindo a few weeks back and to say he was gobsmacked would be an understatement, he was much better than the last time I saw him but I left the moment he mentioned that he was still with Sonto, I mean how stupid can one be? But I suppose it's love, but I did call him and apologized for my behavior I mean it wasn't my call to make whether he stayed or not, we call each other every now and then which pisses Mntungwa off but Lindo was my rock when I had none to lean on he'll have to take it, we now have a sonogram machine in my mini ward and we look at the babies every now and again, which is every hour, but it's much better now the obsession has decreased we used to do it every 15 minutes the nurse ended up saying the

rays from the sonar will be harmful to the babies but I don't think there's anything of that nature she was just exhausted of doing it all the time, we don't know what we're having coz every time we check the babies sex they find a way to hide each other for whatever reason so we just gave up on that, we just enjoy watching them move around even though they don't move around much anymore due to space, we still have the nurse Mntungwa wouldn't have it any other way even though I barely have any episodes, I decided to drop out and just focus on the pregnancy there'll still be time after they're born for me to catch up with tertiary, I feel normal most of the time just the swelling of feet and hands and the dizziness whenever I stand up abruptly but I think we're doing fine, my blood pressure is on and off but the doctor assured me that it's not in the extreme yet if it gets to that point I would have to go for an emergency c-section, I wanted natural birth but

due to preeclampsia it's not my decision to make, Mntungwa handled the damages and I'm not proud to say dad dug a huge hole in his pocket but not once did he complain.

Mntungwa walks in as I'm sitting on the edge of the bed trying to gather strength to stand, I'm only wearing a sports bra coz it makes sleeping bearable he's in his gym shorts and t-shirt

Him: good morning sthandwa sam

He sits next to me and perks my lips and my huge nose

me: morning

Him: how are you guys today

Me: we are fat, no no I'm THE FAT ONE, my nose is huge my back hurts, my feet hurt every...

I just start crying

He smiles at me and I feel like smacking the smile off his face

He lightly pinch my huge nose

Yes it's actually gigantic

Him: you look just fine baby

That just upsets me more

He kneels in front of me and place his hands on my huge belly

Him: look even the minions agree

They start moving around

I giggle as he makes funny faces feeling them move

Him: see? Everything is just perfect

Me: I..

He smashes his lips on mine to shut me up and I pull him by his t-shirt

He knows I'm always ready on that department

I moan in his mouth and he giggles pulling away

Him: you're gonna kill me with this appetite

Me: are you complaining?

Him: never! I love that you're always wet for me

I take his hand and lead it to my moist lady parts

And he groans from the back of his throat

Him: damn baby

Me: it's not me it's your babies

He laughs

Him: that sounds so wrong!

We both laugh

I balance my hands on the bed and throw my head back and enjoy his magic fingers

His lips latch on my bare neck and I feel goosebumps all over my body

He's working his fingers real good I smash my lips on his and wrap my hands around his neck,



I am dripping from just his finger action

Me: I want you

I whisper against his lips

Him: I'm right here baby

I untie his shorts and let them drop to the floor  
he's not wearing boxers and Mntungwa junior is  
ready to play

He helps me stand and turns me around so that  
I'm bent over the bed balanced on my arms with  
my booty sticking out

He runs his hands over my ass as he just  
admires it

Me: baby now please

I feel him rubbing his tip on my opening coating  
his head with my juices before he plunges all  
the way in from the back

I release a muffled scream as I enjoy him  
stretching my walls

Him: oh sh\*t

He holds my waist and pumps me, at first he's slow then in a matter of seconds he's pumping me in deep strokes and hard

Him: sthandwa sam

He groans

Me: baby

I moan

Him: f\*\*\*k

I grab on the sheets as we both become undone

He keeps himself in there and I'm pulsing around his manhood and he's breathing heavily

He pulls out after a while and wipes me clean and I lay on my side

He lays next to me and perks my lips

Him; I love you

I lazily smile at him

His phone rings on the headstand

Him: it's Mkhulu, I wonder how much does he want this time

I giggle he stands and answers his phone as I wait for him to help me stand

Him: baba

Mkhulu:.....

Him: when?

Mkhulu:.....

He hangs up and keeps looking at his phone

Me: babe please help me stand

He throws his phone on the bed and helps me to the shower, he actually chooses to take a shower with me, he looks troubled though, there's that frown on his face and that disconnected look on his face

me: is Mkhulu alright?

He snaps out of it

Him: yah everything is fine

I just let him be

We finish showering and we dress up

I take my breakfast from the nurse and my supplements

Today we are going shopping for the hundredth time for the babies, the two guest bedrooms have been made one nursery for the twins it's spacious and neutrally painted and it's already been furnished and I love everything about it, we go shopping a lot coz it actually puts the both of us at ease about their arrival, we drive out with our nurse at the back seat, usually we're all chatting about what needs to be done and bought and arguing about which color is actually unisex but today Mntungwa is quiet too quiet for my liking, his other hand is on the

steering wheel while another is on my thigh

We drive into the mall and find a parking space

We get off and go to our favorite baby shop and well I just wish we were home coz he's really not here, his mind is elsewhere, I want out of this shop the moment I set foot in it,

I just walk out and he only run to catch up with us when he realizes I'm not next to him

Him: sthandwa sam what's wrong

Me: please excuse us mah

I say to the nurse

Me: are you kidding me right now

He sighs

Him: I'm sorry

Me: are you cheating on me? Is that why?

Because you can't stand looking at a fat me?

Him: where's that coming from?

Me: I'm not stupid Sthembiso Khumalo

Him: baby calm down

Me: I don't want to, I'm so tired of your whining as if you're the pregnant one....

He kisses my lips to shut me up

Him: you must be hungry let's go feed you guys

Everyone is looking at us

He takes my hand and lead us to Wimpy

He knows I love those burgers with bacon

The nurse takes a different table and we take the two seater one

Him: I'm sorry

I just focus on the menus

We order

Him: ngiyaxolisa sthandwa sam ( im sorry my love)

Me: what's bothering you

Him: nothing I was just thinking about work and Mkhulu called asking for money again

Me: do you wanna go back to work?

Him: no! Not yet I wanna be here for you guys

Our food arrives

Him: promise me that you'll take care of yourself

I look at him puzzled

Me: why when you'll be here to take care of us

Him: I'm just saying babe

Me: I will

Him: promise me

Me: okay ok I promise

He smiles at me but it doesn't reach his ears, maybe he misses work he's never been away from work for so long it must be taking it's toll

on him to be putting up with my unstable emotional self I would've been pissed a long time ago I don't think I would've been able to stand myself either

We are halfway through our food when he puts a ring box on the table

I look up at him and he's staring at me

Me: baby I'm...

He heavily sighs

Him: I want you to keep it until you're ready to marry me

I chuckle

Me: that's just crazy, I mean...

Him: please don't fight me about this for once

I take the box and open it and I honestly know nothing about diamonds or rings but I know for a fact this one is expensive, I'm in awe



Him: you like it?

Me: I.. it's expensive baby

Him: you don't like it?

Me: I love it but..

Him: no buts

He looks up behind me and he's eyes and facial expressions change

Him: promise me to keep it together

I try to turn but he lightly bangs the table and I look back at him

Me: why

Him: just stay calm okay think about the babies

I'm still trying to comprehend what's happening when Four police officers stand on our table

Police officer: Sthembiso Khumal?

Mntungwa: how can I help

P officers: grab him

Everything happens so fast, the three officers grab him and push him so hard it makes a loud bang face first on the table

Police officer: we've been looking for you for years "Executor", isn't that what they call you? One dip in the pussy and you drop your guard? Huge mistake boy!

The police officer has a nasty smirk on his face I swear I feel like spitting on him

Me: let him go he didn't do anything we are just having lunch

P officer: such a naive girl it's actually cute

I now stand as my head try's to understand what could be happening, the nurse is now right next to me looking worried

Mtungwa: relax and breath it's gonna be....

HE speaks through gritted teeth as they are

pinning him down hard on the table all eyes are on us and I honestly don't care whose watching these men are hurting my man

Me: YOU ARE HURTING HIM!!!

I yell at the top of my lungs

Tears blind my vision and I try to make my way to him but the p officer holds me back

Me: GET YOUR FUCKING HANDS OFF ME!

He smirks

P officer: feisty huh

Mntungwa: think of the babies

P officer: shame this is so cute

He clears his throat

P officer: EXECUTOR Sthembiso Khumalo, you're under arrest for murder, torture.....

I zone out as the p officer keeps going and reciting his rights for him

Everything now seems to be happening in slow motion, I feel a sharp pain across my abdomen as they cuff him and take him away, I scream at the top of my lungs and the nurse hurries to my side, I don't know how he wiggles himself out of the police officers hold but he runs towards me as I feel dizzy, he doesn't reach me coz they tackle him down like a criminal

Me: HE PROMISED ME! You PROMISED TO ALWAYS BE HERE!

I yell at him as he's lifted off the floor

Mntungwa: and I'll keep my promise!

He yells back

I am all snorts and tears and I don't care whose watching, there's suddenly flashing lights everywhere and a group of police officers probably 15-20 make their way to him, they drag him out and I can hear him say "I'm not resisting, I'm not resisting"

I'm now left with the nurse and all I can hear is his words to me for me to keep it together, I inform the nurse of the pain on my abdomen and she rushes us out with news people flashing their lights on my face, these people have no timing at all

She drives out almost running the journalists over

She drives like a maniac to the house calling the doctor on our way

We get to the house and she rushes me to the ward

She attaches the heart monitors for the babies and checks my blood pressure

I'm struggling to keep my eyes open and I'm out

\*\*\*\*

I wake up and I'm met by two pairs of strange eyes looking down at me, I realize it's the

chubby guy and the colored guy I once showed my bits to thinking it was Mntungwa at the door

Chubby guy: it's so good to have you back

Colored guy is just staring at me

I look away and hold my tummy I'm so glad it's still there

Chubby guy: I'm Tshepo this is Ryan

Ryan: we'll give you some time to yourself

They leave

I stay there for what feels like forever until the nurse comes to check on me

She tells me that I should stay bedridden for time being and give the babies at least a month in there before we remove them, everything around feels like a movie I feel numb, I ignore her and go to the lounge, the news channel is on and Tshepo and Ryan are watching, he's face is there, the reporter keeps saying it's a

breakthrough and a big catch for the cops since they've been on the hunt for the EXECUTOR FOR YEARS!

Me: why is he called the executor?

They look at each other and down avoiding eye contact

Me: SOMEBODY BETTER ANSWER ME!

They say nothing

Me: I AM FUCKING PREGNANT 7 MONTHS TO BE EXACT AND I HAVE PREECLAMPSIA! SO SOMEBODY START TALKING RIGHT NOW!!

They remain quiet

I drop on my knees and sob, I cry out loud for the time we spent, the lies he told, the stress he's causing me and the lives that I've put in danger for falling in love with the EXECUTOR ! Whatever that is!

\*\*\*\*\*

\*\*\*\*\*The End\*\*\*\*\*